

Utah State University

DigitalCommons@USU

All Graduate Theses and Dissertations

Graduate Studies

5-1968

The Father Role as Seen by a Group of College Student Fathers

DeVona Alice Dean Luke

Utah State University

Follow this and additional works at: <https://digitalcommons.usu.edu/etd>



Part of the [Education Commons](#)

Recommended Citation

Luke, DeVona Alice Dean, "The Father Role as Seen by a Group of College Student Fathers" (1968). *All Graduate Theses and Dissertations*. 2237.

<https://digitalcommons.usu.edu/etd/2237>

This Thesis is brought to you for free and open access by the Graduate Studies at DigitalCommons@USU. It has been accepted for inclusion in All Graduate Theses and Dissertations by an authorized administrator of DigitalCommons@USU. For more information, please contact digitalcommons@usu.edu.



THE FATHER ROLE AS SEEN BY A GROUP
OF COLLEGE STUDENT FATHERS

by

DeVona Alice Dean Luke

A thesis submitted in partial fulfillment
of the requirements for the degree

of

MASTER OF SCIENCE

in

Child Development

Approved:

Major Professor

Head of Department

Dean of Graduate Studies

UTAH STATE UNIVERSITY
Logan, Utah

1968

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I would like to thank my major professor, Don C. Carter, for the inspiration and encouragement to pursue graduate work, and my committee members Carroll C. Lambert, J. A. Pennock, and Connie Sims for their cooperation in helping me plan a graduate program to fit in with my other responsibilities.

Dr. Carter and Mrs. Lambert, especially, by their example, have helped me develop a practical philosophy of child development; personal contact with them and their work has been invaluable to me. They also provided the opportunity for me to work in the child development laboratories and gain more experience working with children and student teachers.

My parents helped both by letting me use their tape recorder to record the interviews and by entertaining my two children while I typed this thesis.

Special thanks to my husband for his patience and for encouraging me to complete a master's degree while he completed a doctorate, even though it made our home life more than a little hectic at times.

DeVona Alice Dean Luke

TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page
INTRODUCTION	1
Statement of problem	2
REVIEW OF LITERATURE	3
Changing American family	3
Trends	7
Father's changing role	13
How fathers see their role	15
How authors view the role of father	16
Research on fathers	18
Traditional versus developmental and equalitarian concepts	23
Social class differences	26
Other research	30
METHODS OF STUDY	35
Sample	35
Reasons for selection of sample	36
Interviews	38
Questionnaire	40
FINDINGS	42
Sample	44
Father's role and responsibility	45
Daily care	49
Discipline	51
Moral training	53
Philosophy on child rearing	54
Time spent with children	57
Affection	59
Doctor and babysitter	60
Homework	61
Role satisfaction	62
Family authority	65
CONCLUSIONS AND RECOMMENDATIONS	67

TABLE OF CONTENTS (Continued)

LITERATURE CITED	69
APPENDIXES	75
Appendix A: Questionnaire	76
Appendix B: Transcript of interviews	78
VITA	197

ABSTRACT

The Father Role As Seen By a Group
Of College Student Fathers

by

DeVona Alice Dean Luke, Master of Science

Utah State University, 1968

Major Professor: Dr. Don C. Carter
Department: Child Development

Some literature implies the modern father has abdicated his place as head of the family, but little research has been done to examine the role of the father in the modern American family.

Intensive interviews of 18 college student men who each had at least two children showed that these men are very much concerned with fatherhood and participate actively in the rearing of their children. They feel the father has at least as much responsibility for the rearing of their children as the mother, possibly more. They are involved more in some dimensions of parenthood than others. Those fathers who have demanding responsibilities outside the home participate less in child care but are no less interested or concerned.

These families are quite democratic; most work out child care in an equalitarian manner. For the majority, however, the father remains the final authority.

(202 pages)

INTRODUCTION

A great deal of material has been printed in popular literature about how the American father has either been pushed from, or has voluntarily abdicated, his place as head of his family.

Research in the field of child development and family relations indicates that there has been a decline in the concept of a man as a paternal figure, coinciding with the increase in equalitarian family living. However, some authors indicate that modern men take their role as fathers very seriously.

The American family has been constantly changing in structure. In colonial times, it was an important fundamental institution, a self-sufficient economic unit. The pioneer family was generally large with the authority centered in the male head. Children were valued as helpers. They grew up early and married early, usually living near their parents.

American marriage has been greatly influenced by English law. The Puritan concept of marriage was that it was a contract, a civil transaction. The nation's sex ethics have also been a product of Puritan thinking.

With the changing culture, relationships between man and woman, husband and wife, have changed; relationships between family and society have changed. The family of the future will be based on very different needs than the traditional family.

The position of the father as head of the family has been changing as family living has been modified by social changes in society. As women's roles have changed to provide additional opportunities for them

to function more fully as individuals, men's roles have become different as well. As the patriarchal order has been replaced by more equalitarian ideas of family living, the roles of both men and women have been modified. The extent of modern men's commitment to parental roles, however, needs to be explored more fully. There has been little research done in this specific area.

It appears that modern men are not running away from their roles as fathers but rather that the marriage structure is changing from the traditional authoritarian-father submissive-wife relationship to a system of equalitarian leadership between husbands and wives.

Statement of the problem

This study concerns the extent to which this transition to equalitarianism applies to the rearing of children. Specifically, the objective of this study is to determine how 18 college men actually see their roles as fathers, and how they carry into actual practice their concepts of fatherhood. The study consists of intensive interviews of 18 college student fathers on an individual basis for the purpose of finding any prevailing attitudes these men have toward their role as husbands, and, more specifically, as fathers.

There has been no attempt to secure a purely representative sample or to consider different backgrounds. No statistical analysis has been attempted because each of the men interviewed is an individual with personal differences and a situation that makes his attitudes and actions unique to himself. This study was designed as an exploratory study in the hope that it might provide some leads for further research in this area of fatherhood.

REVIEW OF LITERATURE

A great many authors have written about "The Family;" and the "Changing Family" is currently a popular topic for both professionals and laymen. The specific area of concern to this paper is the changing patterns of family relationships and the division of responsibilities, as well as authority patterns within the family and between the family and other segments of the society, in general, and, specifically in reference to child rearing.

Changing American family

Several authors (Nimkoff, 1965; Dixon, 1963; Sirjamaki, 1955; Williams, 1964) speak of the changing family by saying that no longer does the family have a monopoly of function, but that it shares its functions with other institutions, particularly industry and especially government. The family continues to function as the source of biological maintenance and reproduction, but most other functions: economic, education, socialization of children, care of the aged and needy, have been transferred to other institutions. Where economic necessity used to be the binding tie of marriage, this is no longer true. The functions of the family in a highly industrialized society are becoming less utilitarian than those which formerly served to integrate the family, and are more pleasurable. The integrating principle is changing from work to play. The concept of successful marriage is changing also; it is now rated by psychological values. People judge their relationship on the "happiness" it brings, the personal satisfaction. The family is becoming an equalitarian nuclear unit. And

although the structural place of the family in the total social structure has decreased, the importance of the family to the individual has not decreased. The family emphasis is now on togetherness and is largely child-centered.

The demand for new knowledge has changed education. Now very specialized fields are taught even in the elementary grades. Children deal with content and concepts foreign to their parents, even if their parents have had a college education. Dixon (1963) says the family has become a place of physical shelter and security but is not necessarily the center of intellectual life. Also, the family plays the role as an agency to transmit moral values, as it always has, but it is difficult for parents to teach about concepts which are not part of their own experience so the peer group and "hero relationships" in the schools tend to become the formers of moral values.

Hill (1947) says the story of marriage in our culture is one of growth, strain, and stress, of change and of survival. The family is now more of a specialized agency according to him. It concentrates on personality development of its members, providing warmth, love, and a sanctuary from the anonymity of urban existence.

The family is in the process of change and not all families are changing at the same rate.

Fulcomer (1963) cautions that one factor to remember is that there are many different kinds of families which are adequate and which provide satisfying and nourishing atmospheres to their members.

Mead (1955) feels that the American family is caught between two images:

. . . the image the family people seem to think we once had, and that of a new, emerging one. In between the two there is a real family and it sometimes has a rather hard time. (Mead, 1955, p. 22)

Families are growing smaller and mothers are seeking for ways to escape the career of wife and mother while industrial development throws the father increasingly back into the home. (Dixon, 1963, p. 499)

The present social transition is of such importance that David Mace (Sheerer, 1965) has called it a cultural mutation. He refers here to the transition from living on the land to living in huge urban complexes, and says it is of the same magnitude as the earlier transition from hunting to agriculture. Mace traces the change back to the patriarchal form rooted in agrarian culture, to a new form, brought on by industrialization, which he calls a "democratic pattern." This democracy, he feels, is characterized by freedom, independence, equality, and fulfillment. Of these, equality is particularly pertinent. Equality has complicated marriage because now the marriage has two wills which make conflict inevitable, according to Mace. With equality, the roles of husband and wife are mixed up, resulting in more fun and more satisfaction, but also more difficulty.

Just as one set of patterns becomes established in family living, something, someone upsets them somehow and a new order comes into being . . . Confusion attends the inevitable changes in the task of the various family members . . . The functions of the homemaker have changed drastically in the past few generations. In the memory of those of us now living, the essential nature of family life has been altered. (Duvall, 1950, p. 435)

Some authors feel that the changes taking place in the modern family are detrimental to the health of the family unit.

Today's families are confronted with bewildering choices and decisions, and many of them see no clear way of coping with uncertainties, demands, and opportunities before them. (Fulcomer, 1963, p. 693)

In all history, mankind has not been faced with the pressures of society

we have now according to Luckey (1965). Modern society is composed of insecure people, unclear about the purpose of their lives. Moral standards are declining, more people are depending on drugs and alcohol and counseling to solve problems.

The confusion we experience originates in social problems, not in personal problems. It should be remembered that men today are not lesser men than our forefathers. (Luckey, 1965, p. 685)

Lawrence K. Frank (1958) states

Frequently, family members do not feel involved in a meaningful way in the on-goings of family living. There is still the deep human need to feel wanted and necessary. There is considerable evidence that a search for identity and significance in family relationships is an outstanding characteristic of families today. (Frank, 1958, p. 31)

Fulcomer (1963) then goes on to say

Not the fault of anyone in particular, but yet a most significant fact, is that the pattern of how to be an adequate parent in today's America has not yet been worked out; and the result is tremendous confusion and anxiety among parents. (Fulcomer, 1963, p. 696)

Winter (1958) has this to say:

Uncertainty and extremes are keynotes in the birth of a new social pattern. The family has felt this. Industrial work, changing urban neighborhoods, educational needs, rapid transportation, and mass communication have contributed to the picture. A new family is emerging The problem is not a choice between the old ways and the new. The problem is to discern the necessary and healthy forms in the new. (Winter, 1958, p. 21)

Yet, there are some who recognize change, but don't feel it is, of itself, detrimental to the existence of the successful family.

Cavan (1963) says

In time . . . the family readjusts itself to the new situation, expanding its functions or curtailing them to fit into the total social organization. The changes do not mean that traditional values or functions are necessarily lost altogether. They may simply be transferred to other institutions. On the other hand, new functions may accrue to the family. It cannot be assumed, however, that the only change is in what agency performs the old functions. Changes occur, also, and

often, with great pain in the values held dear by families and by society itself.

At the present time, the American family is in a state of contraction, with a residue of few though vital functions. (Cavan, 1963, p. 18)

Frank (1958) describes a new pattern of family living.

No longer is family living a sort of by-product of house-keeping -- what you have left over after you have done all the chores and the farm work. Husband-wife relationships, long defined by the law and the church in terms of conjugal rights and duties, are in many families being re-oriented. Some people feel that the instability of marriage today may be in part an expression of search for ways in which marriage can come closer to fulfilling human needs and aspirations and to expressing the dignity and worth of the human personality. (Frank, 1958, p. 31)

And Fulcomer (1963) concludes:

The characteristics of the family are not haphazardly put together. The United States family makes sense in that it is related to other factors in our society in at least a reasonably functional way The family reflects culture, as well as helps make it. (Fulcomer, 1963, p. 697)

Trends

There seems to be a concensus of opinion that the pattern of family life in the United States is in the process of change. Several factors are involved in this change, and it is impossible to segregate them and evaluate the effectiveness of any one factor. Several trends stand out, however. Among these are the move to urbanization, more women working, the ability to control childbirth rates and family size, marriage no longer being an economic necessity but people marrying for love, and equality developing between family members in their relationships with one another, as well as the freedom to define individual roles for each family member.

Dixon (1963), in discussing our changing society, says the long-term trend is toward smaller households. In describing the modern family he

says that 40 per cent of families in 1960 had no children under 18. About 90 per cent of the families have both a husband and wife present. Children no longer can be regarded as the "social security" of parents or the motive power for the economy of the family. Artificial control of pregnancy is available to all. Young children tend to leave their home at an early age. Families are growing smaller and the contact years between members of more than one generation are decreasing.

. . . the American family is formed by young people who have probably lived outside their consanguine family households for a short period of years. They come together, and children are born over a period of six or so years. By the time the husband is 50 and the wife 47, the children will leave the household. (Dixon, 1963, p. 497)

Dixon (1963) continues by stating that the birth of the first child is most likely to occur between one year and two and a half years of marriage. The last child will be born in the mother's twenty-fifth or twenty-sixth year.

Fulcomer (1963), however, says that birth rates are up. There are both more young and more old in this society. This may be related to Freedman's report which is given by Fulcomer (1963):

Dr. Ronald Freedman, professor of sociology at the University of Michigan, reported recently to the Maternity Center Association Work Conference that his data show that among those recently married, college educated women expect to have the largest families, and those with only a grade school education the smallest. (Fulcomer, 1963, p. 694)

These changes greatly influence the family pattern, for no longer can rearing the children be a mother's life work. Couples will have many productive years after the children leave the home, and for women especially this provides new opportunities and challenges. Authors such as Friedan (1963) and Rossi (1964) develop the theme of woman's potential as do the many contributors to The Potential of Woman, edited by Farber and Wilson (1963).

Education is more readily available to all and more are taking advantage of educational opportunities.

Fulcomer (1963) also says that people are asking more of marriage today than ever before. Now the strong emphasis is on personal satisfaction.

Carter (1965) has observed that

A recent innovation, historically, has been development of the companionship marriage, with emphasis on comradeship, affection, and the expectation of personal happiness in the relationship. (Carter, 1965, p. 9)

Foote (1961) has this to say:

. . . it begins to seem reasonable to foresee the realization of what Miller and Swanson have termed the colleague family, colleagues in school, colleagues at work, and colleagues in their marital relations. The movement from companionship to colleague-ship is occurring in all these places and all these senses. . . . (Foote, 1961, p. 328)

Some of the most widely published discussions on modern trends concern the number of women employed. In 1959, about 30 per cent of all married couples in the U.S. counted on earnings of both the husband and the wife. In 1942, there were only 11 per cent.

Other changes are also taking place.

According to the Population Reference Bureau, American women are staying in school longer, marrying younger, divorcing more, working until they are much older, and averaging just under four babies per family. In addition, they are, as never before, combining education, and marriage, and work, and motherhood. To sum up, women are upsetting the whole social picture of families. (Fulcomer, 1963, p. 696)

More than half of the working women have children under 18. In the spring of 1963, 3 of every 10 mothers of children under 18 were working outside the home. This is an increase of 66 per cent in the last ten years. Fulcomer bases his figures on the Population Bulletin, June 17, 1961.

Dixon (1963) feels that there is an emancipation of women taking place because of smaller families and ending child bearing earlier. He says that many working mothers do not work because of the need for higher family income but because they prefer to work. He also says, however,

. . . homemakers should be women. Present research supports the notion that women probably know more about the subjective side of the people around them than men do. They are more empathetic and intuitive than men. Everyone seems to agree that empathy is an important characteristic of family life. (Dixon, 1963, p. 499)

Foote (1961) sees female employment becoming more characteristic of the upper part of the income distribution than of the lower. For mothers, however, the Children's Bureau (1962) indicates that economic necessity is probably the reason they are working. They say the lower the father's income, the larger the proportion of children whose mother is employed.

Rossmann and Campbell's (1965) study supports this. They concluded mothers work when their husbands are poor providers. They found the median income of husbands of stay-at home mothers was \$15,000; of the part-time employed mothers, \$12,000; and of the full-time employed mothers, \$7,150. They also found that for the 240 women in their sample, all college educated, that the working mothers were smarter, less satisfied with life, and had less happy marriages, and tend to be better educated than their husbands when matched with women who were not employed.

Many reports give different statistics on how many women work. Of the most concern in a study of parenthood are the figures published by the Children's Bureau (1962). They report that one-fourth of all children in husband-wife families have an employed mother. Children who live with their mother only are twice as likely to have an employed mother as are children living with both parents. Also, the older the children, the more likely that the mother is employed.

Many authors tend to relate the increasing number of women seeking employment to the social problems also widely discussed.

Fulcomer (1963) feels, however

Recent researches have indicated pretty clearly what any wise person might have guessed: broad conclusions and stereotyping of the effect of wives' and mothers' working are not only wrong but very dangerous and damaging to the women themselves and to the families of which they are a part. (Fulcomer, 1963, p. 697)

Leopold's (1958) statement seems appropriate:

While expanding their interests and activities, women do not seek to replace men but rather to work beside them as parents and to become their partners as earners and citizens. Full acceptance by society of this more diversified and responsible role will do much toward maintaining and strengthening family relationships. (Leopold, 1958, p. 282)

One of the most important trends is the apparent shift in authority in the family. This has been termed a move to democracy or to an equalitarian relationship.

Much of the literature having to do with changing roles for men and women suggests that tomorrow's "father" and "mother" will be associated in a pattern of shared responsibility and interdependence. The "modern" family is apparently moving in a direction of joint participation in household duties. (Geiken, 1964, p. 349)

Sullenger (1960) says

Husband and wife together serve as a team of homemakers in the establishment of their marriage. This is not the kind of task that can be carried by the woman alone. Increasingly, men and women alike are recognizing that it takes two to build a home.

As children arrive, it is the mother who is most intimately affected by the new demands and challenges of child care. But young fathers are assuming increasingly effective roles as supporting and supplementary figures in the lives of mother and children. Modern fathers soon learn the intricacies of bathing and feeding the baby as they are encouraged to find the satisfactions of fatherhood so often denied fathers in other years. (Sullenger, 1960, p. 233-234)

Burgess and Locke (1953) present a descriptive example of this change by quoting a case study describing this transition from autocratic control by the husband over his wife and children to democratic control through discussion and guidance by the father and mother on the basis of their greater experience:

In my father's family, the husband was king, his wife was a very obedient little servant who served him in every way and subordinated all her desires to his. He treated her kindly in a paternal fashion, but he never shared with her any of his business confidences, nor ever gave anyone the impression that her judgment was of any value except in household matters -- yet she was devoted to him and never minded his little slights. His children were subservient, too, with perhaps a little more freedom and independence. In all things, however, his will was law, and this relationship continued until after his children had homes of their own.

Our family relationships are more democratic. Even the smallest child enjoys an elevated position in the family group. Father's judgment is final ultimately, but in any problem, we, ourselves, have an opportunity of and take pleasure in making our own decisions and acting upon them providing they are wise. Mother and father co-operate in the discipline, as in all other matters of interest and importance; their relation is one of mutual coordination. We share in all their pleasures, and they take delight in ours. Our parents love us and demonstrate their affection in their excellent guidance, not rule of us. (Burgess and Locke, 1953, p. 477)

Borgman (1965) in discussing the changing family states that nowhere does the new pattern of equality show more clearly than in the division of labor between men and women. There is certainly a trend away from fixed roles.

Men may do the so-called women's work of caring for children, the laundry, food preparation and other aspects of indoor care of the home, whereas women may share in the care of the lawn and garden, chauffeur the family here and there, and may also hold jobs outside of the home, contributing to the family income. Not only do husbands and wives share the work of the home; wives are also enjoying equality in the exercise of power and authority in the family. Decision-making is a joint affair. Such sharing leads to a great companionship between the marriage partners, as well as more respect for one another's contribution to the home. For the father there is also more opportunity for a close association with his children. . . . (Borgman, 1965, pp. 315-316)

Father's changing role

As has been said, the democratic family may be more fun, but it also brings more conflict. Of particular concern to this thesis is the confusion of roles for various family members, and specifically, for the husband-father. Gilbert (1964) says

The twentieth century has been a time of noticeable changes in basic family functions in the United States. These changes are the results of certain social, economic and political pressures. Prior to this century, roles of family members were rigidly defined. The father was the head of the house; the mother's role included her homemaking and child care duties; the children were expected to take on adult mannerisms in their behavior. More recently, there has been a change from the old authoritarian or traditional pattern to a new, flexible, democratic pattern. Industrialization, a more equitable distribution of income, changing child-rearing practices, and woman suffrage have contributed to the way in which society now regards the father's position in the family. (Gilbert, 1964, p. 1)

Tasch (1952), one of the few who have tried to study what the father's present role is, says

. . . In ancient times the roles were rigidly prescribed by convention, customs, and law The modern parent not only has greater freedom in determining how he will enact his role, but also has the opportunity for greater creativity in the definition because of the "shift in the relative importance of cultural and individual determinants of roles." The greater freedom which modern parents have exercised in defining their roles has brought about changes in functions which have been largely unexamined. This is particularly true of the father's functions. (Tasch, 1952, p. 319)

Fulcomer (1963) thinks the power structure and division of labor in families is very confused. He says the authority in the family has changed; roles and responsibilities of various family members are not clear. Often, he says, the American father is in conflict and confusion over who he really is and what he should be doing. He goes on to say that if one family member is confused, all become confused and uncomfortable.

Luckey (1965), in talking about modern society and how in all history mankind has not been faced with the pressures of society people are now facing, lists as one of the problems:

How can a father be the kind of father that he ought to be, devoting time and energy to his children, when, in order to be the success he ought to be and to provide the security and status he wants for his family, he has to commute -- leave home at the break of dawn and return dead tired at night? (Luckey, 1965, p. 686)

Kenkel (1966) reports that the role of the husband and father is greatly different than was that of a man a century ago. Men have always had a role in the housekeeping duties, but their jobs were specifically outlined, as were their wives'. In this changing society, men often are uncertain just what their role should be. Today there is far less distinction between the man's and woman's work in the home.

Ibsen (1967) studied a group of married college students at a mid-western university to determine the kinds of family problems common to married college student families. He concluded that much of the difficulty in the married-student family is located in the problems of role congruence, especially in the case of the student father. The student fathers ranked as problems "how much time he should devote to his family" and "How much he should help his wife with household chores."

For many men, the role of father is a conflicting one of many roles. Even with the freedom now possible for each family member to define his own roles, this often seems difficult and confusing for the male. Kenkel (1966) says

The man of the family has several selves. He is the father to his children, the husband to his wife, and the one who has the primary responsibility for obtaining the family income. He has a role in the family as homemaker in that almost always he is expected to assume responsibility for some work around the home. (Kenkel, 1966, p. 448)

Peterson, et al. (1967) feel that the need to study fathers is especially valid. They say

A review of the literature on parent-child relationships over the years 1929-1956 revealed at least 169 publications dealing with relationships between mothers and their children. Available information on father-child relationships, by contrast, was encompassed in 10 articles, one convention address, and one book. (Peterson, et al., 1967, p. 170)

They go on to say that the evidence is that the influence of the mother over that of the father is not nearly as one-sided as has previously been thought.

Lynn (1961) says there is little knowledge on the husband-father role. He feels that society as a whole fails to appreciate the psychological significance of the role of the man in the family. One reason for this is that fathers, because of their jobs, are less available to be research subjects than are mothers, and therefore, have not been studied as much.

How fathers see their role

In a study to compare the ideal father image to selected television father images, real life fathers described their concepts of an ideal father as

. . . very moral, reputable, and wholesome. He is quite rational, objective, and logical. He is more calm and relaxed than excitable and tense, more sociable and extroverted than solitary and introverted. . . . he is very adequate, valuable, good, competent, effective, and wise. . . . very strong, decisive, independent, and more dominating than submissive. The ideal father is also consistent and predictable. He is more strict than permissive and is a warm, secure person. (Foster, 1964, p. 354)

Jeannie James (1967) studied 20 daughter-father pairs and 20 son-father pairs where the fathers were college students and the children were three and four-year olds. She concluded the fathers tended to

perceive their roles in a more traditional manner than did their children. Little boys perceived their fathers as sharing more activities with them than did little girls, and also that young children perceived their fathers as performing more roles than the fathers attributed to themselves.

Tasch (1952) investigated, along with other areas, the concepts of the paternal role based on reports of fathers themselves. Five functions of fatherhood received the greatest stress: (1) guide and teacher, (2) economic provider, (3) companion to children, (4) authority, (5) child rearing. Of these, guide and teacher was mentioned much more frequently than any other; while the concept of the father as the economic provider for the family was also a basic element. She also found considerable support for the traditional concept of the father as "head of the house," although these fathers saw various manners in which to interpret authority. As these fathers viewed it, authority could be exercised in an autocratic, democratic, or indulgent manner. Sixty-two per cent of the men in her study saw themselves as a companion to their children. Child rearing was considered an important function of the paternal role.

How authors view the role of father

Many authors who have chosen to write about fathers seem to feel their role lacks the importance it had in previous years.

Tasch (1952) writes

Recent literature has characterized the role of the modern American father as "vestigial," he is said to have "abdicated" the rearing of his children to the mother. (Tasch, 1952, p. 358)

Popular literature and mass media imply this same image of the modern father, and often portray him as the family scapegoat.

Josselyn (1956) reviews the thinking of then current literature to the effect that society does not recognize fatherliness as a male

counterpart of motherliness, that the father who is tender or nurturant toward his children is effeminate. Josselyn feels the father is handicapped in achieving a good relationship with his children because of social stereotypes. She also says the American mother has developed a maternalistic attitude toward her husband as well as her children.

Rubenstein and Levitt (1957) speak of a cultural expectation that the American male will delegate all parental responsibility to the mother, leaving material provision the father's only role.

Gorer (1948) describes American society as the "Mother-land" in which the American mother has arrogated to herself, or has had thrust upon her, the dominant role in the rearing of her children. He claims the father has become "vestigial."

Kluckhohn (1949) agrees with Gorer and adds the idea that the reason women have taken over complete control of their children is because men are so wrapped up in pursuing success that they have intentionally abdicated this family control to their wives.

Bowlby (1952) gives this description:

. . . child's relation to his mother which is without doubt in ordinary circumstances by far his most important relationship during these years [early childhood]. It is she who feeds and cleans him, keeps him warm and comforts him. It is to his mother that he turns when in distress. In the young child's eyes, father plays second fiddle (Bowlby, 1952, p. 13)

Bowlby does concede that fathers do support the mother emotionally and help her economically and emotionally to be a good mother, and thereby contribute favorably to the child's development.

Ostrovsky (1959) and Rohrer and Edmondson (1960) discuss the effects the matriarchal nature of American society has on the sex-role concepts of boys. In referring to the lower-class culture, Miller (1958) calls it the "female-based household."

Nash (1965), after reviewing literature on the subject of fatherhood, states there is

. . . an assumption that American society in particular, and probably Western society in general, is mother-centered in its childrearing practices

. . . the weight of informed opinion would seem to regard our culture as matricentric rather than giving equal importance to the two parents in their contribution to the psychological well-being of children: it certainly cannot be called patricentric as regards child-rearing, even if patriarchal by law.

There are no wide surveys or other experimental supports of these opinions, but it would seem reasonable to adopt as a hypothesis the assumption that Western society is matricentric in its child care. (Nash, 1965, pp. 263-264)

Research on fathers

As Nash (1965) and others say, the general assumption is that the American family has become matriarchal in nature, at least in regard to the rearing of the children.

Some authors who have used fathers as a subject for research disagree with this assumption. Tasch (1952) says of her study

. . . the present study, based as it is on the reports of the fathers themselves, indicated, rather, that the role of these fathers is an active one, that not only do they participate in such duties as routine daily care of the child, but the majority of them seem to consider child rearing as part of the requirements of the father role. This, and other evidence of the present study, such as fathers' reports that father and mother more often than not share the disciplining function, in the writer's opinion, seems to be indicative of a changing pattern of paternity in the direction of a more equalitarian relationship rather than atrophy or abdication of the father's role in the family. (Tasch, 1952, p. 358)

In the study Tasch refers to here (1952), she studied the child-rearing practices of 85 fathers who had a total of 160 children. Information was collected through reports given in questionnaires on what the fathers did with and for their children. In this study 77 fathers reported some kind of activity in daily routine care of their children.

Fifty-four fathers reported that both parents took responsibility for disciplining their children, 7 fathers and 24 mothers indicated that they were the primary disciplinarians. About 40 per cent said they led the family in prayer, took their children to church, heard their prayers, encouraged truth telling and discouraged stealing. Almost three-fourths of the fathers mentioned that they participated in activities guiding the development of social behavior including individual conduct and self control. Another finding of the study was that companionship with the children was highly valued although it was in competition with the time needed for the economic support of the family.

In a later study, Tasch (1955) asked 544 mothers and 85 fathers what they considered to be the satisfactions and problems of child rearing. Sixty-one per cent of the fathers viewed themselves as child rearers as well as companions, but the mothers considered the father's role as that of a companion to their children. The study also showed that fathers tend to view the child more as a person in his own right, while mothers were more concerned with the child's socialization process.

Kenkel (1966) describes a pattern of family living.

. . . the man as a father shares with his wife some mutual developmental tasks of parenthood. Beyond accepting his share of these tasks, the father increasingly is expected to find a place for himself in the child-care routine, whether he bathes the baby, or feeds him, or whatever else he feels he can do both to get better acquainted with his infant child and to give his wife some help. As the child grows older, it is frequently the father who is better prepared to help both boys and girls learn such skills as swimming, throwing a ball, riding a bicycle, and, later still, driving an automobile. (Kenkel, 1966, p. 449)

Mead and Heyman (1965) describe how fathers have had a place in all cultures. They say even in the most primitive societies, where the people have no knowledge of the role men play in procreation, they still insist that women must have husbands so that children may have fathers.

Every people believe there must be at least one man to care for the mother, provide shelter and food, guard and teach the child, and give it a stable place in the world. And there are no people, whatever their race, or however simple their culture, who do not in some sense differentiate between a child with a recognized father and a child without one.

Lynn (1961) feels the psychological implications of a man's place in the family far outweigh the additional economic contributions he might make after the basic needs of food and shelter are provided. It is important that he be present in the home as much as he can because (1) he provides love, emotional support, and companionship for his wife, thereby freeing her to be a better mother by meeting many of her psychological needs, (2) he serves as a representative of all men for his daughters, and (3) he is a model for his boys. These needs, he feels, are greater than the need for additional material things.

Two other studies, both recent masters theses, deal quite directly with the actual role some fathers are taking. It seems worthwhile to discuss these.

The first is a masters thesis done at the University of Wisconsin's Department of Home Economics and Education by Karen F. Geiken (1965), entitled Sharing of Homemaking Responsibilities Among Young Married Couples With Implications for Home Economics Curriculum. Geiken investigated three areas of family responsibility: authority patterns, child care, and housekeeping tasks. She chose 190 couples living in a university graduate student housing community (Madison, Wisconsin) and 18 selected girls and 18 selected boys from a Wisconsin high school. The subjects were rated on an inventory of 45 points designed to provide a picture of how married couples divided family responsibility in the three areas under investigation, and how the high school students saw their future married lives

in terms of their expectations in these areas.

She found that of the three areas, authority patterns were the most frequently shared. Child care tasks ranked second in amount of sharing involved, and housekeeping tasks were the least shared. The more "mental" the task the greater the extent of sharing; and vice versa, the more "physical" the less extensive the sharing.

Specific trends were evident in the three areas.

Authority patterns

1. The task of managing and planning for spending money was shared much more in the first year of marriage than later.

2. Money management was not shared as much when the wife was fully employed.

Child care tasks

1. The longer the couples were married, and the older the children, the more sharing that existed between parents in the disciplining of their children and in guiding their play activities.

2. Entertaining the children in late afternoons was more likely to be shared when the wife was fully employed outside the home, whereas the task of staying home with the children during part of the weekend was more likely to be shared when the wife was a full-time homemaker.

Housekeeping tasks

1. There was more sharing when the couple had no children.

2. More sharing took place and more variety of tasks were shared when the wife was fully employed or was a student.

3. Much less sharing took place when the children were over age five than when they were under five.

The area of housekeeping tasks was the only one affected by the

frequency it was performed. The more often the task was performed, the less likely it was to be shared.

The variables of length of time married, whether or not the couple had children, ages of children, or the wife's occupation, seemed to have little, if any, influence on the results.

The high school students' expectations matched quite closely the married couples' way of doing things; however, the high school girls tended to expect sharing to a greater extent than the boys. The boys placed more emphasis on division of responsibility and less on sharing of tasks than girls did. The boys indicated a willingness to assume responsibility for the care of the children, but the boys and girls generally agreed on the separation of housekeeping responsibilities.

Geiken (1964; 1965) concluded that the area of family responsibility was of deep interest to both boys and girls. Both groups felt that family responsibility should be studied in a family living class involving both boys and girls.

Ruenette Bullington Gilbert (1964) entitled her thesis Some Child-Rearing Practices of Fathers With Preschool Children. She chose 34 fathers who had preschool children enrolled in the Auburn University child study laboratory to study the responsibilities assumed by these fathers in the areas of routine care, companionship, and guidance. All these fathers were either college students or professional men. Data was gathered by a written questionnaire on 73 practices in the following categories:

- (1) routine care and safety,
- (2) moral and spiritual values,
- (3) social standards,
- (4) intellectual activities,
- (5) types of guidance used,
- (6) reasons for guidance, and
- (7) characteristics fathers would like to see developed in their children.

Gilbert (1964) found the fathers participated in activities under category (1) more frequently than any other category. This included putting the child to bed, helping him get dressed, chauffeuring the child, supervising the child's washing of himself, giving him a bath, feeding the child, and other routine care like polishing shoes, preparing food, pressing clothes. Gilbert concluded that these fathers were actively engaged in childrearing activities. The data revealed that 85 per cent of the parents decided together on the ways the child's behavior was guided; all 34 fathers set guidance controls for their children. Fathers participated frequently in companionable activities involving the development of intellectual activities, moral and spiritual values, social standards, and routine care and safety.

Kivett and Sperry's (1961) findings suggest that for middle-class, relatively sophisticated parents, both fathers and mothers tend to have the same attitudes toward child-rearing practices. Furthermore, these attitudes are not affected by the age, ordinal position, or number of children in the family, or by the association by child and parent with a university nursery school. Robbins (1963) found that fathers are less affected by the advice of experts on child rearing than mothers, and do less thorough reading than their wives on the subject.

Traditional versus developmental and equalitarian concepts

Elder (1949) used Duvall's technique of studying people's concepts to investigate the conceptions of a good father, good mother, and good child held by a group of Iowa fathers. She found that traditional concepts predominated among these fathers. The traditional fathers stated it was their job to provide well for the family and to act as family disciplinarian; that the mother's job was to clean the house, keep it neat, and to make the child good. The child was to be obedient, polite, and socially

acceptable. The developmental fathers saw their job as fostering the growth and development of the child in all areas, as allowing the wife to grow and develop, and as benefiting themselves from working and playing with their children. This study revealed that traditional fathers disciplined their children for more reasons and with fewer methods than did the developmental fathers who were more interested in their children's maturation and were more likely to help in child rearing and to find parenthood enjoyable. Developmental fathers tended to be skilled rather than semi-skilled or unskilled workers; unskilled and semi-skilled men were more likely to be traditional in their concepts of family roles.

Duvall (1962) later listed the traditional and developmental concepts as follows:

Traditional concept of a good father

1. Is a strong individual, always right,
2. Knows what the child should be,
3. Is interested only in activities he determines are his responsibility for the child's good,
4. Emphasizes giving and doing for the child,
5. Is interested in child's accepting and attaining goals set by father,
6. Feels parenthood is a duty which the church and/or society expects him to discharge.

Developmental concept of a good father

1. Is an individual as is his child,
2. Seeks understanding of child and himself,
3. Emphasizes growth of child and himself,
4. Is interested in child's determining and attaining his own goal,
5. Finds satisfaction in child's becoming a mature person,
6. Feels that parenthood is a privilege which he has chosen to assume.

(Duvall, 1962, pp. 7-8)

Using this same method, Connor, Johannis and Walters (1954) studied university students at Florida State University, and their parents, with similar results. In the traditional concepts the father's role was to provide family finances, discipline and advise children and set a good

example; the child's role was to respect and obey parents. In the developmental concept the father's role was to foster the growth and maturation of the family members; the child's role was to develop in all areas of personality and social development.

Blood (1958) found a significant difference in the division of labor in city and in rural families. Farm wives exceed city wives in the traditional feminine spheres and help their husbands in many masculine areas as well. In urban families, the husband is much more likely to help with household chores.

Sandra Christensen (1963) used a group of student couples living in the same university housing as the subjects of the present study for her thesis on Comparisons of Marital Role Conceptions of Men and Women. She described traditional roles as child care being the mother's job and discipline the father's. She found young single people to be the most traditional. They tend to become more equalitarian in all areas when married; then after several years of marriage they tend to return to traditional views in most areas. However, in the area of household tasks, the men were found to be consistently equalitarian.

According to Christensen (1963) even though both men and women become more equalitarian in the early stages of marriage, they are not moving in the same direction. The man diminishes his expectations of male superiority, while the woman asserts her expectations of equality. Also, later in marriage as they move again toward more traditional concepts, they are not moving in the same direction. The man moves again toward a conception of male superiority; the woman toward affirmation of his need to feel superior and to function in what he considers an acceptable male role.

Another observation Christensen (1963) made in her findings was that

most of the people in her study were members of the LDS Church which affirms a patriarchal order. This may offer some explanation why the men were found to be considerably more equalitarian than the women in their concepts of marriage roles. Although religious influence did not appear as such in the results, it may be that when the wife supports the husband and takes the view that he is head of the family, the husband feels little need to take a firm defensive stand to "prove" his position. Since his leadership is not threatened or challenged, he can then afford to be more equalitarian.

Dunn (1960) and Dyer and Urban (1958) studied marriage role conceptions. Both studies found more equalitarian conceptions concerning child care than any other area, while housekeeping tasks were seen more traditionally. Lovejoy (1961) also found that the area of training and disciplining the children was perceived as being equalitarian. She also reported that more males than females expected the wife to play more traditional roles except in the area of household tasks. Here, the males had much more equalitarian views than females about helping the wife with household chores, especially if the wife worked.

An interesting finding in Hartley's (1960) study was that children believe their fathers feel as badly as their mothers do about leaving the home in order to work.

Social class differences

Obviously, there is not a consensus on the role the modern father plays -- or should play. Each author sees the father in a different light. And, of course, for each father, the image he hopes to be is somewhat different, for today, more so than ever in history, each person is free to be an individual, and each family has the freedom to define for themselves their own pattern of living.

There seems to be agreement that family life is somewhat different for the different social classes -- that the proper role for an upper middle class professional man is not the same as for a low-income blue-collar worker.

Rosen (1964) feels that the socialization of the child in American society is influenced markedly by his parents' position in the class structure. Research findings over the past 25 years show parents in the middle classes to be more accepting and equalitarian in their relationship to the child than parents in the lower class. Middle-class parents tend to be more tolerant of the child's needs and impulses; they are more likely to take into account his intent and motives when transgressions occur than lower-class parents, who tend to respond to the immediate consequences of the child's actions. In discipline, the middle-class parent more often uses reasoning and appeals to guilt, and is somewhat less likely to employ physical punishment than would a parent in the lower class.

Chilman (1964) says that the American socio-economic structure, rather than being a three-class society, is becoming predominately two classes: the haves and the have nots, with, of course, layers within each class. One group is a society of the technically, professionally, and administratively competent, who thrive in the "lush meadows of automated occupations and homes." On the other side are the unfortunate members of society who lack the winning combination of physical, intellectual, social, and emotional gifts for independent survival in the "brave new world of automation."

Elder (1949) mentions that the traditional fathers tend to be the semi-skilled or unskilled workers while the developmental concepts of fatherhood were held largely by the skilled workers in her study.

Carter (1965) feels that although the "companionship marriage" is sought by many middle-class Americans, this ideal is unacceptable to most members of the lower class.

Rainwater (1964), after studying the lower classes of the United States, England, Mexico, and Puerto Rico, describes a culture of the poor which seems to cut across national boundaries. Companionship is not seen by these people as a marital goal. There is definite segregation between husband and wife in their work, play, and social groups. They share very few joint activities, and do not share in household chores and child care.

Sheerer (1965) reports on a study of public housing in Puerto Rico which she says is a contributing factor in family breakdown. In the shacks of Puerto Rico, the status of the father is relatively low and mainly that of breadwinner. In these slum areas, the women generally dominate the family. The father's status becomes even lower in the public housing environment. Here, where there is less economic necessity for a man, the women become even more prominent. The repairs and maintenance usually done by the male are taken care of by the management. The male's authority in the family decreases, and many families in these public housing areas are entirely without men.

. . . although the housing project was built to foster a North American middle class environment for the slum population, one result was to increase the importance of the women in the family to the detriment of the man.

In shack town the father was sort of a "supreme court" to whom the women appealed when they could not cope with the situation. In the public housing situation, he was all but pushed out of the picture. . . . (Sheerer, 1965, p. 295)

Duvall (1946) feels that essentially working-class parents want the child to conform to externally imposed standards, while middle-class parents are far more attentive to his internal dynamics.

Rosen (1964) says

The lower-class family system has been described as rigid and hierarchal, both as regards husband-wife and parent-child relationships. Lower-class parents are less accessible to the child, particularly the father, whose supportive role in child rearing is less emphasized by lower-class than by middle-class mothers. The lower-class mother expects her husband to be more authoritative and to play a major role in disciplining the child. The father who is accessible both as a companion and an authority figure, especially for the son, is far more often found in middle- than in lower-class families. (Rosen, 1964, p. 1148)

Kohn and Carroll (1960) in their study on the relationship between social class and parental roles say:

There has been little empirical work on social class and the division of parental responsibilities There is some evidence, however, that middle-class fathers devote more time to child rearing. Whether or not parental responsibilities are differently allocated is still far from clear. (Kohn and Carroll, 1960, p. 286)

However, Droppleman and Schaefer (1963) conducted two studies, one using middle class early teens and the other lower class late teens to compare differences between mother and father. The results of both studies were highly consistent indicating that roles may be stable across age and social class lines. The only variation they found was that middle-class girls reported fathers grant significantly more extreme autonomy than mothers; lower-class girls' mothers tend (not statistically significant) to be reported as granting more extreme autonomy than fathers. The boys in both studies reported that mothers granted significantly more extreme autonomy than fathers.

Lois Hoffman (1961) found sex differences more striking than social class differences. She studied both boys and girls from both blue-collar and white-collar families on discipline, positive affect, and instruction. All boys and girls associated their fathers more than mothers with discipline, and less than mothers with positive affect and instruction, but

the boys attributed more of all three to their fathers than girls did. The mothers of these boys and girls reported that the fathers were more likely to discipline boys than girls, and both parents had more positive interaction with the child of the same sex. The only class differences especially evident were that white-collar boys reported more participation by fathers in routine child-care activities.

Martin Hoffman (1967) found working class fathers to use more initial and unqualified power assertions than middle class fathers. His findings also suggest that the father has an indirect effect on the child in that his power assertiveness toward his wife contributes to her power assertiveness toward the child. That is, her power assertiveness toward the child is partly a response to her husband's power assertiveness toward her, her behavior affecting the child's personality development.

Other research

Several authors have briefly discussed the father's role and influence on children, mostly as an incidental factor in their research on another subject. Some of these comments are pertinent in view of the case studies of this paper.

On both studies conducted by Droppleman and Schaefer (1963), mothers were reported significantly higher than fathers on components of love, nurturance, or affection, for both boys and girls, and less ignoring and neglecting. Their data suggests that the same-sex parent is more controlling than the opposite-sex parent, and uses more direct methods of control than the opposite-sex parent. Also, their data indicates that mothers in general use more indirect methods of control and are more permissive than fathers.

Droppleman and Schaefer (1963) refer to a paper read at the American

Psychopathological Society in June, 1955, by Funkenstein, King, and Drollette which reported results of their study that the father is the chief source of authority.

In contrast, Aldous (1961) in a study of role functions interviewed 50 college juniors attending Kansas State University. Each one was asked about the discipline they experienced during childhood. In this study, the fathers were not found to be primarily responsible for exercising supervision and discipline. Childhood, for these students, would have been in the 1940's.

Clifford (1959) found that the types of discipline used on 120 Minnesota children were more closely related to age than any other factor, and that mothers were more frequently responsible for disciplining their children than were fathers.

Sears, Maccoby and Levin (1957) in their well-known book say that there was a definite tendency for fathers to be more strongly participants in the rearing of first children, regardless of the child's sex. Also, only boys, and oldest children of both sexes, were more commonly disciplined by the fathers. In the families in which the father showed more affection than the mother toward the children, spanking tended to be more effective if the father did it. This information came from a group of New England parents.

Britton and Hubert (1957) report that mothers said that fathers of sons assumed more responsibilities for household jobs and family routine than did fathers of daughters. The authors concluded that mutual identification between mother and daughter and between father and son was stronger than mother-son and father-daughter identification.

Jackson (1967) reports that his findings are at variance with the

popular stereotypes and with most studies on parental action and attitudes which portray father as more punitive, restrictive or authoritarian than are mothers, who tend to be more warm, loving, permissive. Although these are the traditionally held concepts of male and female roles, his study questions these roles. He says recent studies suggest that fathers of today are less punitive than their prototypes a generation ago, and also suggest that both parents are moving toward the permissive end of the continuum without drastically changing their positions relative to each other. Jackson feels that the expectations that society places on parents have a great influence on how they act. Since mothers are held more responsible for the child's behavior, the mother's reaction to a child's misbehavior is therefore stronger. She tends then to use methods of control more apt to produce desirable behavior. He found that mothers subscribe to the use of methods of control which are more coercive than those suggested by fathers. He says that a woman is violating societal concepts of femininity when she acts in an aggressive or punitive manner, which brings about role conflict for the mother.

Emmerich (1962) found that mothers were more nurturant and less restrictive than fathers. His findings support the commonly accepted view on parent role differentiation, although he admits this is not consistent with several previous studies. He also found that parents did not respond differentially toward daughters and sons on either the nurturance-restriction or power scales. Therefore, he feels his data do not support the beliefs that the parent role is relatively more restrictive or controlling in either the parent-son or parent-daughter social system. He also found:

Parents were neither more nurturant nor more restrictive toward their same-sex than toward their opposite-sex children.
. . . fathers exerted more power toward sons than daughters,

whereas mothers exerted more power toward daughters than sons. The trend is particularly marked in the case of fathers. (Emmerich, 1962, p. 7)

The findings of Mussen and Distler (1959) indicate boys perceive fathers as more rewarding and nurturant than do girls.

A number of studies have looked at the problem of paternal deprivation where a family lacks the father because of death, divorce, or temporary separation in times of war, etc. These tend to show harmful effects on the development of the children and on the mothers' attitudes toward child rearing. They do not directly relate to the subject under consideration and will not be referred to except to mention that fatherless homes are definitely affected by the absence of the father role.

Robbins (1963) conducted a study of both parents where they received training in child rearing practices, and a longitudinal study was conducted for three years after the birth of the child which gave continual reminders of the material taught. The fathers were less affected by the advice of experts than the mothers, and did less thorough reading than their wives on the subject of child rearing. Both parents remembered facts such as whether the child was bottle or breast fed, and the birth weight, but certain areas, such as date of first injection and introduction of cup were not remembered by the fathers. The fathers remembered less well than the mothers on many areas, specifically training, feeding, when first walked, etc.

Several authors have studied the psychological causes of delinquency and conclude that a pattern of disruption of the relationship between father and son exists in the case of delinquent and aggressive boys. Andry (1960) compared delinquent with non-delinquent boys and found that the delinquents felt that their fathers loved them less than their

mothers, and that their fathers were especially defective in the use of praise. Similarly, Bandura and Walters (1959) found the father-son relationship of a group of aggressive boys as marked by rejection, antagonism, and hostility. However, they found little difference between this group and the control group in regard to attitudes toward their mothers.

Medinnus (1965) compared a group of institutionalized delinquents with a matched control group to test the hypothesis that a greater difference would exist between the two groups with regard to perception of father than perception of mother. He found significantly more unfavorable attitudes toward the fathers by the delinquents, but little difference in attitude toward mothers between the two groups. He feels that the father-son relationship is extremely important to the personality development of the child.

Cooper (1955) feels

One of the major responsibilities a man has is to be prepared to be a good father for his children. This includes a biologically sound body which produces good sperm, care and protection of his wife during pregnancy to help enable her to best nurture and develop the embryo, and after the child is born, to work with the mother in providing such infant and early childhood care and guidance as will insure optimum social and emotional development. This may mean sharing the responsibility of routine duties incident to feeding and the like. The assurance of support from both parents gives the child social and emotional development that neither parent can give alone. (Cooper, 1955, pp. 387-388)

METHODS OF STUDY

Sample

The 18 subjects interviewed for this study were married, North American male college students living in university housing at Utah State University.

The University housing office permitted the researcher to compile a list from their records using the forms filled out by the students to apply for housing. On these forms the applicants had listed all members of their family and their ages. A list was made of all families who had either one child above age six (school age) or two children above age one. As it turned out, all those interviewed had at least two children.

A random sample of subjects was chosen from this list of students who met the criteria for the study by choosing every third name on the list. If anyone chosen was unable or unwilling to be interviewed when contacted, the name directly under his was substituted.

The subjects were contacted by telephone. The researcher explained briefly the purpose of the study and asked for an appointment for an interview at the subject's convenience.

All those contacted expressed a willingness to cooperate during the phone conversation. In fact, most were quite enthusiastic about the possibility of expressing their opinions on fatherhood.

However, there were three fathers who failed to appear for the scheduled interview. Of these, one was phoned ten minutes after the time for the appointment; he apologized for forgetting and came immediately to be interviewed. One father, when phoned, apologized for missing the

appointment and suggested another time. He also failed to keep the second appointment. Although he verbally expressed interest in the study and a willingness to participate both times he was contacted by phone, after he failed to appear for two scheduled appointments, he was not contacted further and the name directly below his on the list was used. The third person who missed his first interview apparently had a very busy schedule; he was very difficult to reach by phone. The interviewer tried several times to contact him a second time, but finally selected the next name on the list to substitute for his.

Three of the fathers made the extra effort to phone the interviewer after the appointment had been arranged to say they would not be able to come at the scheduled time. All three requested a change in time and did come at the rescheduled time.

The cooperativeness of these men, although most had heavy schedules, indicated a concern and a willingness to discuss their fatherhood roles.

Reasons for selection of sample

1. Using only North American fathers. This study is primarily concerned with the changing roles of the modern American family. There are many students attending Utah State University from other countries, but their background and cultural influences upon their roles in marriage and the family might well be very different from those applicable to the American family.

In selecting people for the interview, all those who listed a foreign country for their home address or whose name was obviously foreign were excluded from the list. Seventeen of the fathers interviewed are citizens of the United States; one is Canadian as is his wife. It was felt that his cultural background would be very similar to that of the other subjects,

and he was included. One father is married to a girl from Ireland and her background in that country seemed to influence their relationships with the children somewhat, according to her husband's responses. This information was not reported on the housing office records and the interviewer was not aware of this until the interview was in process.

2. Originally it was not planned to distinguish between ages of those interviewed. However, after making the trial interviews, it was evident that a new father (one with only one very young child) would not have experienced the variety of situations included in the questionnaire and possibly wouldn't have thought ahead to them, such as discipline, teaching of moral values, or spending time with his children other than "tending" them or caring for their daily needs. It was decided after the trial interviews to limit the subjects to those who had children old enough to be concerned with all facets of parenthood; therefore, the criteria was added that they have either one child over six (school age) or two children over age one.

3. University students were used for two reasons. First, to have a more homogeneous group which could be representative of a general segment of society. This group is representative of middle-class America. Second, it would be almost impossible to pick a random sample from townspeople because of the difficulty of obtaining the needed information to compile a list of those who meet the other criteria.

4. Students living in university housing were used, again for two reasons. First, ease of obtaining information about them. Records of their children are filed with the university housing office, whereas there is no source of information about the families of students living off campus. They would have to be contacted individually. It did not seem

feasible to contact 8000 students to obtain the necessary information from them with which to choose a sample of 18.

Secondly, there has been other research (Christensen, 1963) done on marriage roles of husband and wife using a sample including married students living in this same housing area at Utah State University. This allows some comparison between the study on the roles of husband-wife and between father-mother-child.

Interviews

The interviews were held at the time, and in general, the place suggested by the father being interviewed. If he did not readily suggest a time, the interviewer suggested they meet during the day or early evening on campus in a private office in the Family Life Building. Four of the subjects had their own private offices on campus and suggested meeting there, which was done. Some of the interviews were held in the evening: the interviewer went to two of the subjects' homes because they were home tending their children while their wives had other commitments; three of the fathers came to the interviewer's home.

A tape recorder was used to record the entire conversation between the interviewer and the subject. The tapes were later transcribed verbatim and can be found in Appendix B. The recorder was turned on at the first of the interview and placed in an inconspicuous place. The interviewer introduced herself briefly, then asked the subject for some general information of a personal nature. By the time the subject had told about his age, education, occupation, and that of his wife, along with information about their children and religious affiliation, all but one father was relaxed and seemed to have forgotten about the tape recorder. There was one father who remained extremely nervous throughout the entire interview.

Each subject was told in general terms that there has been a lot written and said on the changing roles of men and women in modern society, and that the roles of father and mother are different now than they were for those of our grandparents' generation. Also, they were told that little attention has been given to studying modern fathers.

After thus briefly introducing the thesis, the interviewer asked the subject to respond to the broad overall question, "In terms of today's world, what do you feel a father's role should be?" Every attempt was made to allow the participant to phrase his response in his own manner without structuring the questions. Following their response to this first question, they were asked, "Do you think the father or the mother has the most responsibility for the care and training of the children; just how much responsibility does a father have?" Then, "In actual practice in your home at the present time, who takes the responsibility for the care and training of the children?"

During their response to these questions, the interviewer occasionally interjected brief probing questions to get more detail on a point mentioned or to get clarification as to the meaning intended by the father. Also, occasionally, this method was used to lead the father to discuss an area on the questionnaire which was closely related to what he was saying.

After drawing the interviewee out in this manner, the interviewer proceeded by saying, in effect, "You have covered a great deal of the material I am looking for. However, there are a few specific questions I would also like to ask each person in this study." She then proceeded to ask specific questions from the questionnaire which he had not covered in his general discussion. (See Appendix A for entire questionnaire.)

Most of the fathers interviewed were very verbal in discussing their feelings about their role as a father, and several were most anxious to express their opinions on parenthood and on how children should be raised. Although in several cases a great deal of what was said did not relate directly to the questionnaire, it was felt that all of their comments should be included to give a better picture of that father's attitudes and actions in the total area of fatherhood.

Questionnaire

After compiling a tentative questionnaire, four trial interviews were planned to test it. On the first trial interview, it was readily apparent to the interviewer that she was getting mostly information on how the actual care of the children was divided between husband and wife, and the reason for the division depended largely on the number of hours a day each spent in the home. And this, of course, depended on both the husband's and wife's occupation, which in a student situation, was largely a matter of necessity rather than choice.

Realizing that she wasn't getting enough information on the real authority-decision making aspects, and the feelings of responsibility and obligation of the father, the interviewer added these questions at the end of the first trial interview:

1. If you and your wife should disagree on a major point of child rearing, whose way would the situation be handled?
2. Is your control over your children more direct or indirect?
3. If your wife does the majority of the actual care and training of the children because of the ratio of time spent in the home, is this done on her own initiative, or do you consider this a responsibility of yours which you delegate to her?

The subject then provided the type of information which the interviewer was seeking.

The revised questionnaire with the added questions was used for the second trial interview. It was felt that the purposes of the interview and the questionnaire were fulfilled with the addition of these questions, and no further trial interviews were held.

In the first few interviews made, two of the subjects questioned the interviewer further on the details of the thesis problem after the interview was completed and the tape recorder turned off. She explained to them that the literature available gives some indication that the modern father is abdicating his role to his wife. Upon hearing this, the subjects became quite verbal in expressing strong objections to this attitude on their part. Some of the best material for these men was given after the interview had been completed.

It was decided after this had happened the second time to leave the recorder running until the subject had left the room. After the questionnaire had been answered this viewpoint was explained to the subjects, and their reaction was also recorded, especially in those cases where their answers had been vague and indefinite. This method was successful in obtaining some of the best responses from some of the subjects, but in other cases, gained little or no response.

FINDINGS

This study was designed as an exploratory study in the hope that it might provide some leads for further research. No statistical analysis has been attempted to compare the responses of the fathers. However, it is desirable to look for general trends in the attitudes and practices of these particular fathers.

It should be noted here that even within each family, changes are constantly taking place in the patterns of responsibility and child care.

The most noticeable trend shown by the data was that these are 18 different families and for each, the roles of the family members are defined in terms of that family's situation and needs.

It would be almost impossible to accurately divide them into categories, or even to classify each family, for they don't follow a consistent pattern.

In one family, the roles of the mother and father seem traditional in the sense that the father takes almost the entire responsibility for discipline and moral training and decision making, yet that same father also does the majority of the daily care of the children: meals, putting them to bed, etc., which traditionally the wife would do.

In another family the father leaves the discipline and moral training almost entirely to his wife. Usually this wife goes ahead and takes care of rearing the children on her own. On the surface, it would appear this father has "abdicated" his place. Yet he says, "I think 100 per cent of the responsibility for raising the children is mine. I delegate this responsibility to my wife in actual practice. My wife has good

ideas on child rearing and I prefer her methods to mine. She probably does 75 per cent of the actual work, but I'm aware of how she's doing it, and on occasion I overrule her if I think it's necessary. I am the head of the family. If we disagree strongly about child care, it would be done my way." This father prepares breakfast for his children each morning, although he has to leave for school before he can eat with them. He takes the responsibility of seeing they have good medical care and responsible babysitters, and takes turns (50-50) with his wife getting up in the night with his children. And when they are sick, sometimes it is the father who stays home with them so his wife won't miss her classes.

He says, "I don't think I spend very much time with them; I just can't work it in now that I'm in school." He spends two hours every day with them, and half a day on weekends "involved with them all the time I'm home." He doesn't even try to read the paper when he's home. "I think I should spend at least four hours every day directly doing things with them."

By some standards this father may have abdicated his place to his wife, but he certainly couldn't be classified as "not concerned with the rearing of his children."

Certainly there was no indication at all that these fathers have any intention of abdicating their place as father to their wives or anyone else. Although in actual practice, many of the wives do the majority of the actual child rearing, most of the husbands felt they were "shirking" responsibility because of the lack of time they could spend home.

Some analysis has been attempted in order to establish hypotheses for further study.

Sample

The men, although still in college, were all mature individuals. Most were graduate students. Of the 18, nine were doing graduate work and one had just completed his Ph.D. two months prior to the interview. Two of these were in their last quarter of work toward their doctorate. Eight of the fathers were undergraduates, and five of these were last-quarter seniors. Only two fathers were still in lower division work and both had been employed several years before starting college. They were studying a variety of fields, but well over half (12) were in some area of science or engineering. All the graduate students had financial help from the university, most in the form of teaching assistantships or fellowships. Two of the undergraduates had part-time jobs off campus, but only the one father who had recently completed his Ph.D. was fully employed.

The ages of the fathers ranged from 25 to 36, the median age being 30. The ages of the wives also ranged from 25 to 36 and their median age was 28. Five were the same age as their husbands, the widest age difference was four years between husband and wife. One man, the youngest in the group (age 25) and the most recently married (three years), was married to a woman three years older than he who had two daughters (age 5 and 6) at the time of their marriage. Except for the one case, the men had been married from six to 15 years, the median time nine years.

Half the wives were full-time homemakers. Five were working full time and four were either part-time students or had part-time jobs. The wives of these men had a wide range of educational backgrounds. Two had less than a high school education, five had bachelor's degrees, and two

of these were doing graduate work. Six had a high school diploma only, and five more had about one year of college.

Eleven of the couples considered themselves to be active members of the LDS Church. In two families, the wives were active in the LDS Church, but the husbands were not members of any church. One couple were members of the LDS Church, but did not consider themselves active. One family was not active in any church, although the wife had previously been LDS. One couple was active Espiscopalian, one couple active Presbyterian, and one couple was Catholic, the wife being very "staunch," the husband coming from a Protestant background and still holding Protestant beliefs, admittedly Catholic only by record and for the children's sake.

In nine families, all the children were of the same sex. Six of the families had three children each, four families had four children, one had five children, and the remaining seven families had two children each. All the families had at least two children over the age of one year, the criterion specified for the sample.

Father's role and responsibility

All the men felt they had a definite and important responsibility as husband and father. This study agrees with Gilbert (1964) and Tasch (1952) who found fathers to be taking an active part and interest in the rearing of their children. The majority seemed to lean toward a traditional concept of what the father's role should be in the sense of being the head of the family, the breadwinner, chiefly responsible to see that their children were properly trained. Yet intermingled with their traditional concepts were many developmental and equalitarian bits of philosophy.

None were able to make a clear distinction between their job and that of their wife in the area of child rearing.

One father said his roles should be to "spend time with his children so they are raised by a father as well as a mother, see that they do well in school, choose the right friends, and learn to treat each other properly. Also, he should work with his wife to see that she keeps the house and children physically cared for." Another stated emphatically that his family was his most important responsibility, while another said his family always comes before his job: "I can always get more employment, but you can't always get more children."

One man said the father's role was to be "head of the household. Although I know there's a move toward equality now, I think the husband should still keep the edge on things at home." He thinks the father should handle the discipline of children and do his share of housework and child care. Another said, "Nothing has changed as far as I'm concerned. The father is still the breadwinner for the family. He is still responsible for providing for his family, and he's still responsible for rearing the children."

Yet another said, "Things have changed completely. A father has to be prepared now to take over the mother's duties at any time." He feels the father is in closer contact with the children now and that they come to their fathers with their problems. He feels a father needs to show his affection more. "But today's pace is pushing fathers away from the family and they have to fight much harder to stay in the family circle."

One man said, "I guess the main reason for fathers is because children can't think for themselves and make mature decisions. They need a father to do it for them. A father's duty is to help them become independent and learn to live with others."

Several mentioned particularly that part of the father's role is to

spend time with the children and to show them affection.

The concensus of feeling on the father's role was put into words by one father: "A father has a demanding role. He should be the head of the home, make final decisions after discussing things with his wife. He is responsible for rearing his family, also to have a job, do church and community service, and have a good education."

When asked how much responsibility the father should have compared to the wife in the rearing of the children, the majority said "Ideally it should be 50-50." Fourteen felt that the responsibility was shared between the parents. Four men, however, said the father had 100 per cent of the responsibility, although they, of course, delegate a large portion of their responsibility to their wives because their wives are in the home with the children more than they.

None of the fathers indicated they felt they had any less responsibility than their wives for rearing the children, although one father said he'd like to turn some of his over to his wife if she'd let him. He said, "I'd like to be a grandparent and be able to have the fun and let someone else do the work." But in actual practice, this is not happening; his wife won't let him out of any responsibility but insists he stay the head of the family. His attitude could better be described as "lazy" rather than "disinterested." He spends all the time he isn't in class with his family and is interested and concerned about them. He does a good share of the child care, but leaves the housekeeping chores to his wife. This father had been married the longest (15 years) and had five daughters ranging in age from 4 to 13 at the time of the interview.

The fathers were then asked how the responsibility for rearing the children was actually divided in their family. Ten said their wives were

doing more than half at the present time. Seven said it was divided equally, and one said he did the majority.

It was in this area of the actual practices in the home where comparisons were the most difficult. So much depended on the situation of that particular family that each family could only be compared to itself.

Most of the men did express the feeling that they couldn't take a bigger share of the actual care of their children because they just weren't home as many hours as their wives were. Several felt that this was the way it should be -- that although they did have at least as much, if not more, responsibility than their wives, in actual daily care the wife did and should do more while they (the father) took a larger burden of providing the material needs for the family than their wife did.

The one father who now does more than his wife spends more time at home than she does. She works full time and has an hour's drive to her job. Although he intends to always be the decision maker and disciplinarian for the family and remain responsible for the moral training of their children, he does expect his wife to be in the home all the time and do a larger portion of daily child care and household chores after he completes his formal education and she quits her job.

Not only the family situation, but attitudes are extremely important and make comparisons difficult.

One father said, "While I'm in school, I just don't have much time at home. My wife definitely leads out now in taking the responsibility of raising the children. She has at least 60-40 now, possibly as high as 65-35."

Another father went into considerable length to convey the idea that he participated actively in raising his children. He said he felt a

great responsibility here and didn't think it was right to turn his responsibility over to anyone else. When questioned specifically, he said his wife "probably handles 90 per cent of the actual care."

Of the seven who felt the actual responsibility was being equally shared, four have wives who work full time, one wife works part time and is a part-time graduate student, and two wives are full-time homemakers. The two husbands who shared equally, even though their wives are home all the time, were both sophomores in college, and neither was employed. It could be assumed that these two men had less pressing responsibilities outside the home than any of the others.

Daily care

Tied in closely with actual responsibility for child rearing is daily care, including feeding, putting the children in bed at night, getting up in the night with them, etc.

Daily care for most families is quite equalitarian during the hours both parents are home. Here again, this depends largely on the relative amounts of time husband and wife spend in the home.

Twelve fathers said they shared about equally during the time both they and their wives were home together. Five said the wives did more than they. Of course, in families where the wife is home all the time and the husband very little, the wife does the majority for the 24-hour period. But in considering the time they are home, all the husbands do some of the actual "chores" of child care, and most do a fair share. One father does more than his wife. Several felt they didn't do as much as they should. The husbands tend to help more with child care than with housekeeping tasks. This agrees with the findings of Gieken's thesis (1964). Only two felt they were doing more than their share.

One husband said he feels it is the wife's responsibility to do the "dirty" jobs -- diapers, getting up in the night, etc. He does help her. but considers it "helping her with her job." Another feels he really does more than his share, but explained his wife gets nervous and frustrated easily and has bad headaches as a result. He feels she is unnecessarily harsh with the children, so he does all he can to reduce the tension level in the home by relieving her of as much of the work as he can.

One father said he did not generally help with housework, but pretty well takes over the care of the children when he is home, which is several hours each day. Several mentioned they felt it is their responsibility to give their wives a rest and therefore take over the children for a while when they get home in the late afternoon.

The general trend appears from this small sample that husband and wife work together a great deal in caring for their children while they are home together. The wives tend to do more of the feeding (seven husbands said wives did most of this, none said the father did) and several husbands mentioned they felt their wives were a little too strict at mealtime -- more fussy about the child's eating habits than they would be.

The fathers were divided between sharing getting up in the night and letting the wife do the largest share. Six said the wife always or almost always is the one to get up, eight said it was about equal. The rest take turns, but the wife does the larger amount. There was some indication that the wife gets up more frequently when the child is an infant and requires night feeding, but the older the child is, the more likely it is for the father to be the one to get up.

One said, "My wife always got up when they were babies; we've never

had a bottle-fed baby. Now that they are older I probably get up more than my wife does. I don't mind getting up. Actually -- and this may sound stupid -- when the children get up in the middle of the night, these are some of the choicest times with them. Just to go into their bedroom and reassure them. I enjoy it, I really do."

Some families have a planned schedule: husband gets up on weekends, wife on school nights; others take turns. Several leave it for "whoever hears them first."

But when it comes to putting their children to bed, this becomes more the father's job. The child's bedtime is one time when most of the fathers can take an active part in helping care for the child. One mentioned, "No reason why the work can't be fun, too." Here again, in most families (ten) this is shared. But five fathers said they "always" get the children ready for bed, and only three said this was primarily their wife's responsibility.

For one family, bedtime is almost a group activity. Each parent takes two children and gets them ready at the same time. Then the children say their prayers with both parents present.

Discipline

In half the families (nine) the husband handles the majority of the discipline. In these families the wife usually handles only the routine, minor disciplining when she's home alone with the children. "Major" discipline or discipline for serious matters is left for the father when he gets home, and when they are both home at the same time, he handles most of the situations that come up. The father is almost always the one to administer physical punishment.

For almost half (seven) discipline is divided about equally between

the father and the mother. For these families, discipline is administered by "whoever catches the child in the act." Neither parent leaves the discipline for the other, although they usually discuss with each other the situations that come up. For many of these families, the father feels his discipline is more effective than his wife's.

Only in two of the families is the wife the chief disciplinarian. In one of these, the husband said in effect, "My discipline is far too rough. Her way is better, so I want her to do most of it. She always talks to me about it, and when I feel it's necessary, I discipline them in addition to what she's done."

The other father said he doesn't feel he takes as much responsibility for discipline as he should and his wife prods him into disciplining the children whenever she can. She expects him to give the "spankings," but he tries to get out of as much as he can. He is admittedly much more permissive than his wife.

By far the majority said age and sex of the child had no influence on discipline, although three said each child was handled differently, this depending on the personality of the child.

One father felt that as the children got older he would tend to discipline his sons and his wife the daughters. One felt he would be more permissive with a daughter if he had any, while two felt they were stricter with their daughters than their sons. Three of the fathers mentioned that although sex or age didn't influence the amount or kind of discipline given now, that as the children get older, the father's discipline would become increasingly more effective than the mother's.

Six fathers felt they were more permissive than their wives, while nine said the wives were more permissive. One said they were "both the same. We agree on everything." Two said it depended on the situation,

that each was strict in different areas.

Most of these fathers considered their control over their children to be more direct than indirect.

Moral training

The area of moral training is largely a shared effort for these families. In almost all, the wife is home more of the time than the husband, and of course, she has more opportunity to provide moral training during daily activities. Eight fathers said "we both do," while eight said "we both do, but I take a definite lead here."

Only two said their wife takes the lead in the moral training of the children. One of these was the father who admittedly would like to turn the work part of the responsibility over to his wife if she'd only let him. The other said, "She does mostly because she has better communication with them and is with them more."

Several mentioned that the basis of moral training for their family came from the Family Home Evening lessons which they hold regularly from a manual prepared by the LDS Church. One father, who himself if not a member of any church although his wife is, said, "This Family Home Evening we've been having is an excellent training in values to the extent they can understand it. My wife usually presents the lessons to us, then we both try to teach them the right way to do things. As we go along, we both try to contribute. I think this Family Home Evening business she's been teaching us has accentuated the values we want to put in our training better than just the day-to-day teaching."

When asked about teaching their children to say prayers and helping them with prayers, a majority, 11 of the 18, said this responsibility was equally shared. For three of these families, the bedtime prayer is a

family prayer with both parents and all the children present. Two fathers professed to take the lead here; five men said their wife takes the lead. This might be expected since four fathers readily admitted their wife was definitely more religious than they. However, two of the men who had no religious affiliation said they helped the children with prayers every night, although the wife had originated the practice. One commented, "My wife taught them to say their prayers. Now, I go in and say them with them, rather than them going in on their own. I think I should do things like that with them. I feel close to them when I do it -- I enjoy it."

When asked who helps the children prepare short talks for church, the majority said the wife does most of it, although several husbands help either write the talk or help the child learn it. Two take full responsibility, one of these a father who has no religious affiliation although his wife is active in her church.

A definite majority said age and sex of the child had no influence on who handles moral training. Four said they expect each parent will work more with the children of their same sex as the children get older. One father said he expects to do more as the children get older because he'll have more time with them then; one said the wife will do more later because he'll have less time.

Philosophy on child rearing

All but two fathers stated that they agree very well with their wives on philosophy of how their children should be raised. Both that admitted disagreement said it was because of different backgrounds. One man had come from a Protestant background while his wife was raised in a strict Catholic family. The other was raised in the United States and his wife in Ireland by "the old school."

The rest felt that at the present time they agree quite closely, except for a few "except on religion," and "except I'm a (or my wife is a) stricter disciplinarian." All have been married and have been parents long enough to have reached agreement by now. Several obviously had never considered this and concluded that "We agree so well I've never thought about it before."

When asked by whose philosophy the children are raised, eight felt it is joint, four said the wife's, and four said the father's. The four whose wife's philosophy is most dominant all said this was the case because she is with the children more than they. Where the children are raised by the father's philosophy, all said their wives have changed their ideas since marriage to agree with their husbands. One said, "Initially I had a definite philosophy and my wife didn't. So the first few years, it was my philosophy. Since then, my wife has been going to Relief Society and has formed some opinions on things. I'd say now -- well, we discuss a lot, so it's probably 50-50 now. Initially it definitely wasn't -- it was 100 per cent my philosophy."

Sixteen of the 18 credited their parents and the way they had been raised for the development of the philosophy they now have on child rearing. One said formal education had influenced him the most, while four more gave education some credit. One felt he and his wife had developed their philosophy entirely from experience using their first child as a "guinea pig" and observing others. Three mentioned church influence as playing a large part in their philosophy; while religion, although not specifically mentioned in answer to this question, was brought out by several fathers throughout their responses as having considerable influence on their concepts, family relationships and methods of doing things.

These fathers were also asked if they had done much reading for the expressed purpose of helping them become better fathers. Most said in effect, "I don't pursue it," although three do make some attempt to study for this purpose. One couple who apparently agree on almost every point, and run an equalitarian family, settle any questions or disagreements by "research and study, then a mature consensus." This father does search out material by experts on whatever subject he feels they need help on, both written material and discussing the problem with specialists.

The majority of the fathers have taken classes in psychology or child development although well over half the fathers are studying some area of science (other than the social sciences) or engineering. It might be assumed that they have registered for these classes in an attempt to better inform themselves to be good fathers. Several "read all articles we come across in popular literature, but don't search out material." Although they were not asked to name specific references, five said they had read Spock and three use Skousen's book on raising boys. Four stated that although they had studied some psychology or child development, it had no influence on their own ideas of child rearing. About half the wives, however, have made a deliberate attempt to study the subject of child rearing either by taking child development classes or reading material on their own. These findings tend to agree with Robbins (1963) who found fathers to be less affected by the advice of experts than mothers and to do less thorough reading than their wives on the subject of child rearing.

Time spent with children

One of the most interesting, but difficult to evaluate, points was the attitude of the father. In many cases there was considerable discrepancy between the facts they gave and their concept of themselves as a father.

For example, one father made quite an issue of how important it is for a father to spend time with his children and said he has a great deal of responsibility for the rearing of his children. When asked how much time he actually spends with them, he answered in effect, "Really a lot -- at least half an hour a day."

On the other hand, another father apologized for being unable to spend the time he should with his family saying, "I'm shirking my responsibility and leaving it all on my wife's shoulders. I'm only able to spend two or three hours a day with our children."

The actual amount of time these fathers spend with their children varies widely, but all make a deliberate attempt to spend some time doing something directly with them, not just being present in the home at the same time as their children. One spends about half an hour a day on weekdays with his children while another spends several hours each day; the rest range somewhere between. Most spend more time on weekends. This, for the most part, is time spent with the children and does not include mealtime and time when the husband is studying at home.

Some of the fathers plan group activities where they can do something with all their children. One said he and his wife try to devote some time each day individually to each of the children doing what that child chooses, plus time spent all together. Another father reads to his children every morning for 45 minutes while his wife fixes breakfast.

Then they do things together, often a pre-planned activity, in the evening for another hour or hour and a half. Another said, "I try to do what they want to do when I'm with them."

One of the fathers does not try to plan a time each day with his children; he spends one evening a week with them where they share some pre-planned activity, then spends another evening or Saturday afternoon with them doing something spontaneous, but with them.

Another father, the one who recently completed his doctorate, admitted that while he was in school he spent "very little" time with his family. Now, although he is often home in the evenings, this is mainly "Just home at the same time my children are -- we aren't really doing things together." But, "Saturday is family day," and on Saturday, they try to plan activities all will enjoy, such as going tubing in the winter.

Several fathers expressed concern that they are unable to spend more time with their children because of heavy academic loads and hope they can be home more after they finish school. They feel they are not meeting their responsibility to their family, and also, that they are missing out personally. One said, "I wish I could be home with them more while they're little. I feel like I'm the one who's missing out."

Age and sex of the children does seem to have some influence on the time spent with them and on the activities. Half the fathers response was "no" when asked about this, but the other half said "yes," there was some difference. For most of these, the difference is in the age of the children. They indicated, as might be expected, that as the children get older and develop peer relationships and interests outside the home, there is not the same closeness between child and father as there was

when the child was very young. The fathers who mentioned this did so wistfully, obviously feeling there was some loss to them taking place as this transition to independence occurs. Three mentioned there is some difference in the activities between father-son and father-daughter; as the children get older the play between father and son gets rougher and more athletic than that of father and daughter, although in the early years, there is no difference.

One father who has two sons said he would probably favor a daughter if he had one because his sons favor their mother and are closer to her. Yet, another father said both he and his wife tend to favor their children of the same sex.

Certainly, there is no indication in these families that the sex of the child is a significant factor in determining relationships between fathers and their children as has been indicated by some studies.

Affection

In the area of affection, the fathers were asked first if there was any difference in the amount or type of affection shown their children by them or their wives. They were also asked who the children come to when hurt, and whether the age or sex of the child had any influence on affection in any way.

Seven said both parents show the same amount and type of affection. Another seven felt their wives express more affection toward the children than they do, and four felt they, as fathers, are far more affectionate than their wives.

The father of three young sons said, "We both hug and kiss and hold them. We have a good relationship. I don't feel uneasy at all about showing physical affection for my sons."

The age and sex of the child has no influence in any way for the majority while the child is young, but for some, as the children get older, the manner but not the amount of affection changes and sex does make some difference in the manner it is expressed. Two admitted sex of the child might have some influence. One father of two daughters, the youngest eight, said he would probably favor a son although he would try not to. (His daughters are his wife's by a previous marriage.) Another, the father of three boys and one infant girl said he loves them all the same, but is more protective of his daughter. "She is the only girl and also the youngest. She's a little special to me."

The same number said the children come "to whoever they can get to first," or "equally to either one," when hurt as said the children go to their mother first for comfort. Only one said his children come to him first rather than their mother.

Doctor and babysitter

A majority of these couples decide together when their children should see a doctor and which doctor to see; for about half of these, the father's decision is final. Most mentioned that "we ask around; we usually choose a doctor on recommendations from others." Five of the mothers take the lead in this, while two of the fathers make these decisions.

For several families, they either take turns or both go to the doctor with the children. For a few, the wife does this alone. One father said he always takes the children to the doctor, but his wife always handles everything concerned with dental work. Another said, "If I'm available, I sometimes take them. They always seem to get along a bit better with penicillin shots if I take them than when she does. It just depends on what conflicts each of us have at the time."

When a child is sick, for those families in which both parents have responsibilities outside the home, six said it would depend on the relative importance of the parents' jobs that day; whichever one could most easily stay home would -- it could be either. Four felt the wife should always be the one to stay home because the only reason for her working was to help him get through school; therefore, his schoolwork came before her job. For the rest, the wife was not employed and would be in the home anyway.

When asked about babysitters, the trend appears that the wife takes the lead in choosing them and making arrangements. Here, too, for most of the families, this is something which the husband and wife discuss together and he is concerned about and may do himself, but his wife is more likely to do so.

One man said, "I tell her to call them, and she calls 100 per cent of the time. I don't think it's my place to call a young girl. If I don't like who my wife chooses, I tell her to get someone else. I'm very concerned about having responsible girls stay with our children."

Another, married for ten years, said, "My wife takes that responsibility (choosing a babysitter). She always asks me for my opinion first, but I think she does this to help me feel a part of things, knowing ahead of time who'll I'll suggest. Even if she didn't consult me, I'd go along with whoever she picked."

Homework

A majority of the fathers felt they take the responsibility in the area of homework. For several, this is exclusively their role while for several others, it is divided by subject matter, the wife usually helping with the English and literature, and the father with science and math.

Only three said their wives do more than they, and in these three families the father is rarely home when the children are awake.

Several fathers expressed considerable concern here. One says he is the one who goes to PTA meetings and goes to school to talk to his children's teachers, not just when requested, but frequently on his own because he is very interested.

Another whose children are still preschoolers and whose wife takes a great deal of the responsibility for child rearing herself and doesn't let him help as much as he'd like, really "lighted up" when homework was mentioned. "Oh, I hope I can do that," he said, "I'm planning to. I want to help there as soon as they're old enough."

Another spends a great deal of time working with his sons in their schoolwork. "We wanted to get them off to a good start. I'd make these little flash cards when they were learning to read. I'd sit down with them and have them read, then I'd write down words that they couldn't pronounce and then I'd put these on the cards. When they'd get through reading, we'd go through these, and before they went to bed we'd go through these again."

Role satisfaction

Only five of the fathers consider the arrangement for dividing family responsibility to be satisfactory in their family.

The rest expressed definite dissatisfaction either because they cannot do a larger share of the child rearing themselves or because their wife has to work and cannot be in the home with the children during the day. Some fathers complained on both counts.

All the fathers want their wives to be full-time homemakers; half are at the present time, even though their husbands are full-time students.

Having their wife in the home is more important to many of these fathers than having an income which enables them to live more adequately materially. The feelings of most of these fathers are more emphatic than revealed by the written record. As indicated by muscle tension, facial expression, and gestures, most had strong opinions in this area. Two of the fathers mentioned they were aware that the wife may need the opportunity to get away from the home and children, and one said this was the reason his wife was working. He also hopes after they are through school they can have a large enough home she won't feel this need to get away and will choose to stay home.

For most of these men, rearing the children is an important responsibility, one they feel is largely their personal responsibility in which they definitely want an active part rather than delegating this role to their wives. They are aware, also, that they are primarily the financial support of the family, and time does not permit them to be in the home as much as they would like. Because of this, they want their wife, whom they respect and trust, to be the person who takes care of their children while they must be away. They are aware that the father-child relationship brings rewards for the father, and feel it is beneficial for the child's proper development -- something they are most concerned with.

When asked what they hoped to change after completing school, most who were dissatisfied and wanted to make changes said, "My wife will stay home then," and "Hopefully, I'll be able to spend more time with my children."

Also mentioned were "have a larger home where we won't all be on top of each other." The university housing area where all these families were living at the time of the interviews consists of multiple-unit dwellings with each apartment made up of two small bedrooms, bath, and a

combination kitchen-living room with an eating counter for a divider. One father described the children's bedroom and the bunk beds as "stacked in and hung from the ceiling," to get four children in one small bedroom. Another couple were sleeping on the couch so that their children wouldn't be crowded in the bedrooms.

One father said, "When I get out I expect to have more time with them, and maybe have better opportunity to make better use of the time. We'll have a little more financial backing to go places and see things. We're limited in what we can do now." He went on to say, "My wife terminates employment the day I graduate. I'm from the old hard school that feels the wife should be in the home -- be where she's needed when she's needed. Other than her being home all the time, and hopefully I'll be able to spend more time with the children, things will stay about the same."

Very few mentioned anything to indicate that they would like to change their family's relationships as to who has the most responsibility or who takes the most responsibility, other than hoping for some changes in available time.

One father, the one who takes over to relieve his wife's tension, did say he hoped after he was finished and they had larger living quarters and more money that his wife would be able to relax more and could take over a larger share of the household and child care "chores." He had already accepted a job in Hawaii where he hoped the living would be more "relaxed" and would improve their situation.

One other father hopes after he is finished and has more time his wife will let him take a bigger share of the responsibility. "As soon as our first child was born, she said she wasn't going to work anymore, that it was her job to raise the children, and that's what she does. I'd

like to do more; I hope I can spend more time with them then [after he gets out of school]. I'm afraid they think I'm just a visitor now."

Family authority

"When we disagree on how the children should be handled in a particular situation, we do further research and study on the problem, then reach a concensus."

"It's always done my way when I'm home. I think she'd do it my way even if I weren't home. Yes, I'm sure it would be -- I know it would."

"Well, we try to come to a mature agreement. If no compromise can be reached, I have the final say."

"We discuss it. Unless there is a good reason not to, it would be done my way."

"Probably my wife's way. Occasionally I override her, but she gets her way more than 50-50."

"It's always done my way. I am definitely the decision-maker for the family."

"We decide together -- it's a democracy."

The question, "If you and your wife should disagree on some point of how the children should be raised, whose way would it be done?" provided a variety of answers, but for the majority of these couples, strong disagreement is rare. In those situations where husband and wife have opposing views on how the children should be handled, they generally discuss it together and reach a satisfactory agreement. If they can't, the husband makes the final decision and his wife respects his right to do so.

These fathers were also asked, in effect, who is actually the "boss" in the area of child rearing.

Here again, the responses were varied. In essence, what most of the fathers were saying in describing the authority pattern for their family was that they share the responsibility between husband and wife. In most situations, both parents participate to some extent in caring for the child's needs, whether they are physical, emotional, intellectual, or social. Both parents are aware of their children's needs and how they are being met.

The husband feels, and his wife supports this, that he is the head of the family. He makes the final decisions for the family in all areas, including child rearing, but seldom without the knowledge and consent of his wife, and usually the children's wishes are also considered.

His wife would not do anything without his approval, but in actual practice, she is the one who is largely responsible for carrying out their plans for their children.

This agrees quite well with Tasch's (1952) findings that in most areas, the responsibility cannot be fit into exact categories of either "father's" or "mother's" job. For most, it must be described as "mainly" the responsibility of one or the other. Usually the parents talk over the problem together; neither goes ahead without the knowledge and consent of the other, although the father has the final say.

These fathers are very much concerned with how their children are raised; they are conscious of the work load a mother carries in the home and try to help their wives whenever they can. They enjoy their children and spend time with them because they want to. Their families might be best described as a combination of patriarchal-democratic.

CONCLUSIONS AND RECOMMENDATIONS

In summarizing the responses of these 18 fathers, several trends are prominent. It is recognized, of course, that more extensive study needs to be done to establish proof of these hypotheses.

1. Each man's commitment to parenthood is an individual thing; these men are committed to parenthood and have given considerable thought to their roles.

2. Fathers are very much interested and concerned about the rearing of their children; fathers are definitely involved with their children and take an active part in their care; they schedule time to spend with their children and plan activities with them.

3. Fathers are more involved in some aspects of parenthood than others. They feel they are more responsible for such dimensions of parenthood as discipline, teaching moral values, homework, and bedtime activities; they are less concerned with routine care and babysitter arrangements.

4. Older fathers with more diverse responsibilities have less time to spend, do less of the actual child care tasks, but are no less interested or concerned.

5. All want their wife to stay home while they have children in the home. Where the wife is employed this effects the situation in the home. The husband is more likely to do more of the daily care tasks, both child care and household, in this situation.

6. Fathers are quite democratic about working with their wives in child care; most work out child care in an equalitarian manner. For the

majority, however, the father remains the final authority, but he is not a dictator in any sense.

7. In reviewing the literature it appears that the authors who found indications that American fathers are "abdicated" their place to their wives were those who wrote several years ago. More recent writings, as well as this study, indicate that the trend is to active involvement by fathers in the rearing of their children.

A need appears now for more thorough analysis into the area of fatherhood.

It is recommended that more extensive work be done to investigate the following areas.

1. A thorough analysis of which aspects of child rearing fathers are most interested in, participate in, and for what reasons.
2. A study similar to this one using as subjects non-college men, particularly men of the working class.
3. A look at fathers with an additional ten years experience at fatherhood, with the additional social pressures and outside interests that come with increased time, and compare their roles and attitudes with a group such as the subjects in this study.
4. Look at how wives view their husbands' role as compared to how the husbands see it.
5. Investigate the influence of religion, education, background and home life on philosophy of child rearing.

LITERATURE CITED

- Aldous, Joan. 1961. A study of role functions. *The Family Life Coordinator* 10(2):43-44.
- Andry, R. 1960. *Delinquency and parental pathology*. Methuen Press, London. 173 p.
- Bandura, A. and R. H. Walters. 1959. Adolescent aggression; a study of the influence of child-training practices and family interrelationships. Ronald Press, New York. 475 p.
- Blood, Robert O., Jr. 1958. The division of labor in city and farm families. *Marriage and Family Living* 20(2):170-174.
- Borgman, Bernice D. 1965. The changing family II. *Young Children* 20(5):315-327.
- Bowlby, John. 1952. *Maternal care and mental health*. World Health Organization, Geneva. 179 p.
- Britton, J. H. and M. A. G. Hubert. 1957. Attitudes and practices of mothers rearing their children from birth to the age of two years. *Journal of Home Economics* 49(3):208-219.
- Burgess, Ernest W. and Harvey J. Locke. 1953. *The family*. American Book Company, New York. 729 p.
- Carter, Don C. 1965. *Commitments in marriage*. Pruett Press, Inc., Boulder, Colorado. 30 p.
- Cavan, Ruth. 1963. *The American family*. Thomas Y. Crowell Company, New York. 548 p.
- Chilman, Catherine S. 1964. The crisis and challenge of low-income families in the 1960's: implications for parent education. *Journal of Marriage and the Family* 26(1):39-40.
- Christensen, Sandra Jorgensen. 1963. Comparisons of marital role conceptions of men and women. Unpublished MS thesis, Utah State University Library, Logan, Utah. 85 p.
- Clifford, Edward. 1959. Discipline in the home: a controlled observational study of parental practices. *Journal of Genetic Psychology* 95:45-82.
- Connor, Ruth, Theodore B. Johannis, Jr. and James Walters. 1954. Intrafamilial conceptions of the good father, good mother, and good child. *Journal of Home Economics* 46(3):187-191.

- Cooper, William M. 1955. Education for responsible husbandhood, pp. 385-389. In Marvin B. Sussman (Ed.). Sourcebook in marriage and the family, 1955. Houghton Mifflin Company, New York.
- Davis, Allison and Robert Havighurst. 1947. Father of the man. The Riverside Press, Boston, Massachusetts. 245 p.
- Dixon, James P. 1963. Our changing society: impact on families. *Journal of Home Economics* 55(7):495-500.
- Droppleman, Leo F. and Earl S. Schaefer. 1963. Boys' and girls' reports of maternal and paternal behavior. *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology* 67(6):648-654.
- Dunn, Marie S. 1960. Marriage role expectations of adolescents. *Marriage and Family Living* 22(2):99-111.
- Duvall, Evelyn Ruth Millis. 1946. Conceptions of parenthood. *American Journal of Sociology* 52:193-203.
- Duvall, Evelyn Ruth Millis. 1950. Changing roles in the family cycle. *Journal of Home Economics* 42(6):435-436.
- Duvall, Evelyn Ruth Millis. 1962. Family development. J. P. Lippincott Company, New York. 532 p.
- Dyer, William G. and Dick Urban. 1958. The institutionalization of equalitarian family norms. *Marriage and Family Living* 20(1):53-58.
- Elder, Rachel Ann. 1949. Traditional and developmental conceptions of fatherhood. *Marriage and Family Living* 11(3):98-100, 106.
- Emmerick, Walter. 1962. Variations in the parent role as a function of the parent's sex and the child's sex and age. *Merrill-Palmer Quarterly* 8(1):3-11.
- Farber, Seymour M. and Roger H. L. Wilson, Editors. 1963. *The Potential of Women*. McGraw-Hill, New York. 328 p.
- Foote, Nelson N. 1961. New roles for men and women. *Marriage and Family Living* 23(4):325-329.
- Foster, June E. 1964. Father images: television and ideal. *Journal of Marriage and the Family* 26(3):353-355.
- Frank, Lawrence K. 1958. The changed character of the American family. *National Parent-Teacher* 53(1):30-32.
- Friedan, Betty. 1963. *The feminine mystique*. Norton Press, New York. 410 p.
- Fulcomer, David M. 1963. What are today's families like? *Journal of Home Economics* 55(9):693-698.

- Geiken, Karen F. 1964. Expectations concerning husband-wife responsibilities in the home. *Journal of Marriage and the Family* 26(3): 349-353.
- Geiken, Karen F. 1965. Sharing of homemaking responsibilities among young married couples with implications for curriculum. Unpublished MS thesis, University of Wisconsin, Madison, Wisconsin. (Original not seen; reviewed in *Journal of Home Economics* 57(2):140-141.)
- Gilbert, Ruenette Bullington. 1964. Some child-rearing practices of fathers with preschool children. Unpublished MS thesis. Auburn University, Auburn, Alabama. 45 p.
- Gorer, Geoffrey. 1948. *The American people: a study in national character*. W. W. Norton, New York. 246 p.
- Hacker, Helen Mayer. 1957. The new burdens of masculinity. *Marriage and Family Living* 19(3):227-233.
- Hartley, Ruth E. 1960. Children's concepts of male and female roles. *Merrill-Palmer Quarterly* 6(2):83-91.
- Hill, Reuben. 1947. The American family: problem or solution? *American Journal of Sociology* 53(2):125-130.
- Hoffman, Lois W. 1961. The father's role in the family and the child's peer-group adjustment. *Merrill-Palmer Quarterly* 7(2):97-105.
- Hoffman, Martin L. 1967. Power assertion by the parent and its impact on the child, pp. 128-140. In Gene R. Medinnus (Ed.). *Readings in the psychology of parent-child relations*. John Wiley and Sons, Inc., New York.
- Ibsen, Charles A. 1967. The married college student: a problem of role congruence. *The Family Life Coordinator* 16(1-2):21-27.
- Jackson, Philip W. 1967. Verbal solutions to parent-child problems, pp. 41-50. In Gene R. Medinnus (Ed.). *Readings in the psychology of parent-child relations*. John Wiley and Sons, Inc., New York.
- James, Jeannie H. 1967. The father role as perceived by young children and their fathers. *Journal of Home Economics* 59(6):428-432.
- Josselyn, Irene M. 1956. Cultural forces, motherliness, and fatherliness. *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry* 26(2):264-271.
- Kenkel, William F. 1966. *The family in perspective*. Appleton-Century-Crofts, New York. 500 p.
- Kivett, Vira Rodgers and Irwin V. Sperry. 1961. A comparison of mother-father attitudes to child-rearing practices. *The Journal of Nursery Education* 17(1):30-33.

- Kluckhohn, Clyde. 1949. *Mirror for man*. Whittlesey House, New York. 313 p.
- Kohn, Melvin L. and Eleanor E. Carroll. 1960. Social class and the allocation of parental responsibilities. *Sociometry* 23(4):372-392.
- Lee, Dorothy. 1960. The individual in a changing society. *Journal of Home Economics* 52(2):79-82.
- Leopold, Alice K. 1958. The family woman's expanding role. *Marriage and Family Living* 20(3):278-282.
- Lovejoy, Debi D. 1961. College students conceptions of the roles of the husband and wife in family decision-making. *The Family Life Coordinator* 9(3-4):43-46.
- Luckey, E. B. 1965. Education for family living in the twentieth century. *Journal of Home Economics* 57(9):685-690.
- Lynn, David B. 1961. The husband-father role in the family. *Marriage and Family Living* 23(3):295-296.
- Mead, Margaret. 1955. How fares the American family. *National Parent-Teacher* 49(6):22-25.
- Mead, Margaret and Ken Heyman. 1965. *Family*. The Macmillan Company, New York. 208 p.
- Medinnus, Gene R. 1965. Delinquents' perceptions of their parents. *Journal of Consulting Psychology* 29:592-593.
- Miller, W. B. 1958. Lower class culture as a generating milieu of gang delinquency. *Journal of Social Issues* 14(3):5-19.
- Mogey, J. M. 1955. A century of declining paternal authority. *Marriage and Family Living* 29(3):234-239.
- Mussen, P. and L. Distler. 1959. Masculinity, identification and father-son relationships. *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology* 59:350.
- Nash, John. 1965. Father in contemporary culture and current psychological literature. *Child Development* 36(1):261-297.
- Nimkoff, M. F. 1965. *Comparative family systems*. Houghton Mifflin Company, Boston, Massachusetts. 402 p.
- Nye, F. Ivan and Lois Wladis Hoffman. 1963. *The employed mother in America*. Rand McNally, Chicago, Illinois. 406 p.
- Ostrovsky, Everett S. 1959. *Father to the child*. Putnam, New York. 173 p.

- Peterson, Donald R., Wesley C. Becker, Leo A. Hellmer, Donald J. Shoemaker, and Herbert C. Quay. 1967. Parental attitudes and child adjustment, pp. 170-179. In Gene R. Medinnus (Ed.). Readings in the psychology of parent-child relations. John Wiley and Sons, Inc., New York.
- Rainwater, Lee. 1960. And the poor get children. Quadrangle Books, Chicago, Illinois. 202 p.
- Rainwater, Lee. 1964. Marital sexuality in four cultures of poverty. *Journal of Marriage and the Family* 26(4):457-466.
- Riesman, David. 1965. Two generations, pp. 72-97. In Robert Jay Lifton (Ed.). *The woman in America*. Houghton Mifflin Company, Boston, Massachusetts. 293 p.
- Robbins, Lillian Cukier. 1963. The accuracy of parental recall of aspects of child development and of child rearing practices. *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology* 66(3):261-270.
- Rohrer, John Harrison and Munro S. Edmondson. 1960. *The eighth generation*. Harper Brothers, Inc., New York. 346 p.
- Rosen, Bernard C. 1964. Social class and the child's perception of the parent. *Child Development* 35(4):1147-1153.
- Rossi, Alice S. 1965. Equality between the sexes: an immodest proposal, pp. 98-143. In Robert Jay Lifton (Ed.). *The woman in America*. Houghton Mifflin Company, Boston, Massachusetts.
- Rossmann, Jack E. and David P. Campbell. 1965. Why college-trained mothers work. *Personnel and Guidance Journal* 43(10):986-992.
- Rubenstein, B. O. and M. Levill. 1957. Some observations regarding the role of fathers in child psychotherapy. *Bulletin of the Menninger Clinic* 21:16-27.
- Sears, Robert R., Eleanor E. Maccoby and Harry Levin. 1957. *Patterns of child rearing*. Row, Peterson and Company, Evanston, Illinois. 549 p.
- Sheerer, Elizabeth Taylor. 1965. The changing family I. *Young Children* 20(5):290-300.
- Sullenger, Thomas Earl. 1960. *Neglected areas in family living*. Christopher Publishing House, Boston, Massachusetts. 447 p.
- Tasch, Ruth J. 1952. The role of the father in the family. *Journal of Experimental Education* 20(4):319-361.
- Tasch, Ruth J. 1955. Interpersonal perception of fathers and mothers. *Journal of Genetic Psychology* 87:59-65.

- Sirjamaki, John. 1955. Culture configurations in the American family, pp. 1-7. In Marvin V. Sussman (Ed.). Sourcebook in Marriage and the Family. Houghton Mifflin Company, New York.
- Thomas, Rachele. 1967. The challenge of fatherhood. Parents Magazine 42(6):41-43, 106-107.
- U. S. Department of Health, Education, and Welfare, Social Security Administration: Children's Bureau. 1962. Working mothers and day care services in the United States. Washington, D. C.
- Williams, Robin, Jr. 1960. American society. Knoph, New York, 575 p.
- Williams, Robin, Jr. 1964. Our changing rural society. Knoph, New York, 542 p.
- Winter, Gibson. 1958. Love and conflict: new patterns in family life. Doubleday and Company, Inc., New York. 191 p.

APPENDIXES

Appendix A: Questionnaire

1. Personal information:

Age and present level of education
 Age and education level when married
 Field of study; occupation if any
 Wife's age and education
 Wife employed or student now
 Children and their ages
 Active in church; if so, which one

2. In terms of today's world, what do you feel a father's role should be?
3. How much responsibility do you think a father has for the care and training of his children? Compared with that of his wife?
4. In actual practice in your family, who takes the most responsibility for rearing the children at the present time?
5. How do you see your own role as a father, compared with that of your wife, in the discipline of the children?

In which situations do you discipline?
 In which does your wife?
 Does age or sex of child have an influence?
 Who is more permissive?
 Is your control over your children more direct or indirect?

6. Is there much difference between your ideas and your wife's on philosophy of child rearing?

Are your children raised more by your philosophy or your wife's?
 What has had the most influence on your ideas of how children should be raised?
 Have you done much reading on child rearing to help you as a father?

7. If you and your wife should disagree on a major point in how the children should be reared, whose way will it be done?
8. How much time do you spend with your children? (weekdays and weekends)

What do you usually do during this time?
 Does the age or sex of the child have an influence?

9. How do you divide up the daily care of the children?
- Feeding?
 - Getting up in the night?
 - Bedtime rituals?
10. Who makes the decisions concerning the child's welfare, such as choosing a doctor or dentist, deciding when the child should see a doctor, and choosing a babysitter?
- Who makes the arrangements?
 - Who takes them to the doctor?
 - Whose responsibility is it to stay home with a sick child if you both have commitments outside the home?
11. Who takes the lead in teaching the children moral values?
12. Who helps the children with homework?
13. Is there a difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection you show or in the manner in which you express affection to your children?
- Who does the child come to when hurt?
 - Does age or sex of the child have an influence?
14. Are you satisfied with your arrangement of dividing the responsibility of caring for and training your children?
15. When you finish school, do you expect to change the division of responsibility for child rearing? If so, what will be the difference?
16. Who has the real authority and decision-making control concerning the children? Is this your wife's to do on her own, or is this a delegated responsibility from you?

Appendix B: Transcript of interviewsCase 1

Personal information: Husband age 27, wife age 26; married for ten years. He finished one year of high school after marriage, she did not complete high school. Husband now graduate student in final year of Ph.D. in an exact science field. Husband has fellowship, does not work other than being a full-time student. Wife has never worked. Children: girl, age 8; boy age one and a half; girl 12 months adopted one month prior to interview. Active members of LDS Church.

Question: What do you think the role of a father should be in today's world?

Well, let me tell you first what I think it isn't, and what it shouldn't be. First of all, I think most people today are parents by accident and not by choice. Most people feel that if you have one or two children, that is absolutely sufficient. Children are a convenience, necessary maybe to appear settled. In other words, if you have a wife and a couple of kids, you're sound, and mature, and stable. This is a necessity. Sometimes a wife will do; they don't need any children. And so, consequently, when most men think of parenthood, they are not thinking at all of having children; they are thinking of security, and their life is their profession and their ability to have fun, be caught up in the rat race. Their aim is prestige, money, security; and most often, money and prestige come even above security for the husband. Men are not really fathers but rather businessmen who make wise decisions. Sometimes children are wise decisions and sometimes they're not. So fathers never really stop and consider their role as fathers. They never really think of themselves as fathers or husbands. Consequently, their relationships with their wife and their children is weak. And this is wrong! This is how it is, and this is wrong!

So, anything you can do to contrast this, then, is the proper direction to go. To me the most important thing I can do is my family. The absolute most important thing is my family. And if my job detracts from this, then I'm going in the wrong direction.

My responsibility as a father is to become acquainted with my son so that at the time he has the slightest inclination of a problem I will be aware of it, not so much because I know him but because I was a son once. I think that at a certain age I had certain problems. For example, when you reach puberty a young boy starts having wet dream, and is very concerned about this; and if he doesn't have a father to anticipate this problem, then he probably isn't going to get an answer to it. I don't think he's going to ask the question until he's pretty well got it solved and has an answer to it himself. So you have to anticipate problems in everything.

Parents teach their children to be loving and kind till they get to school. Then when they get to school, "Get out there and beat 'em up -- don't let them push you around. You've got to get the best grades in school," ---- this kind of thing. A father has to anticipate this. And if he's going to teach his kid to really compete in all things, then he's going to compete in the home. In other words, he's going to fight with the other kids, he's going to have to establish his position among the members of the family. Or, he's going to have to take the other attitude: consideration for all people, and when he gets to school he's going to also have to take this attitude, which will mean he's going to come home all beat up and not have his father say, "Go back and kill that kid tomorrow." I think fathers change roles here. At one age he has to be kind to his little sister and brother; at another age he is expected to step on anybody who is going to step on him. So you have to anticipate problems. And I think the father is responsible for this.

I think a very beautiful relationship is the relationship _____ [friend] has with his son, _____ [boy, age one]. I think this is very important that fathers play and roughneck and do things with their kids.

Like last night. I was crawling on the floor. I was building a coat of arms, doing one up in a funny paper mache type of thing. And every time I'd get on my knees _____ [son, age 1½] would come charging over and jump on me and yell. He thought that was funny because to him, to see me on my knees, means we are going to have some fun. And I think this is good and it make me feel good that he feels this way towards me. And almost anytime I get on my knees, my family, _____ [daughter, age 8] and _____ [son, age 1½], come charging in and they're on top of me because they feel something toward me, and they think it's fun.

My wife feels it's a father's duty to play and have fun with their kids. She thinks this is an integral part of growing up -- to have fun with your children. I think this is something that is neglected, on a general basis, in America. I don't think husbands consider themselves part of the children's play. I think a father is obligated to go through a childhood with every one of his children -- to go through everything they feel and to try to anticipate everything they are going to feel, and try to make it easier for them. Not necessarily without the pain, but be there to help them when they fall over. In other words, you expect them to get in that first fight.

And, oh -- a lot of things. For example, I think a child deserves the knowledge that if he does something wrong he will be punished for it. That doesn't mean his father doesn't love him, but he deserves the right to receive punishment and to know where the line is. He deserves the right to have a line. And I think this is something that parents don't do today. I think parents feel that if you love your child you'll let him go helter skelter, with no limits. And if you don't love your child you make him do what is convenient for you. Where, in reality, if you love your child you give him a set of boundaries; and these boundaries are the child's world. And in this set of boundaries the child is

free to do. In our family, our family council sets up the boundaries.

An example of this is when we moved into the home where we used to live. There was a line in the sidewalk, and if _____ [daughter, age 8] went past it she was on top of the bridge on the canal. And she could see no difference between looking into the water and climbing up on the bridge and walking back and forth on the handrail. That scared us no end, you see, because if she'd fallen off, that would have been it. So there was an imaginary line on the sidewalk and she couldn't go past that line. No matter what, she could not go across that line. And she got paddled several times for going across it. It was hard to paddle her for going across it because it was negligible. But we did, and I think we did her a service because she realized that there are boundaries and there are laws and we did her a favor by teaching her that there are results and consequences of the law.

Question: Who paddled her, you or your wife?

It would depend on who caught her. I think a husband can be made the bully in the home. For example, with our son, my wife cannot paddle him and make it stick. Right now, _____ [daughter, age 8] will discipline him. Last night we had scotch tape and he was going to hold both of them, and _____ [daughter, age 8] was going to cut the tape off for me. Every time she laid down the tape he would grab it. She was helping me, and _____ [son, age 1½] was hindering. And when _____ [daughter, age 8] went to take it back, she had to fight. But when I took it back, there was no problem. And the same thing comes up with _____ [wife]. She can pick him up and just wallop him for all she's worth, and he's not sure whether she's playing or not. But when I paddle him, he knows it. Well, it becomes easy for _____ [wife] to say, "We'll let your dad do it." So I'm made out the bully.

I think it's necessary for both the husband and wife to find out the most effective means of disciplining. And I don't think paddling is the most effective. In the case of _____ [son, age 1½], he's very sensitive to a scornful word. I mean, if you look at him and frown and speak harshly, it's much more punishment than paddling. He can take knocks and paddling and it does absolutely nothing for him. _____ [daughter, age 8] was different, though. You could look at her, or speak to her, and it didn't mean much. But one wack on the bottom and she knew you meant it. And _____ [daughter, age 1] I'm not sure. There must be a way to communicate with her -- I'm not capable yet. You see, we've only had her a month. And she's young yet, just a year.

Question: Who do you think has the greatest responsibility, you or your wife, when it comes to raising the children?

I don't think anyone has greater. I think I'm responsible for certain activities. For example, my wife does not like outdoors at all. And there are some things I enjoy and can enjoy with my children, such as roller skating. My daughter likes to roller skate, I love to roller skate, so there's a good opportunity for her and for me to have an experience together, and that's important.

Also, this summer, we're going to take some things on bicycles and peddle up and stay overnight at the first campground. And I think it is necessary that we do it. _____ [daughter, age 8] would be denied this if she didn't have a father. I think things like this are very necessary, and they're quite a bit of effort, but I think it's necessary.

My wife is responsible for a great deal of the discipline because I'm not there. I don't think you can discipline hours later. It has to be an immediate thing. If it isn't immediate, it's almost useless. That's why the wife should stay home.

Question: Is it her decision, or yours, as to how they should be disciplined, or is this a delegated responsibility from you to her?

Well, on this, with only three children, we're really limited. But every since we started with _____ [daughter, age 8] -- we started so young that we absolutely and definitely felt an obligation to take into account as many opinions on the subject as possible, and almost without exception, we disagree with those of our parents on how it should be done. And so, on something very important, we discuss it and come to a decision together.

For example, the other night, it took an hour and a half -- we lay in bed discussing what we should do with _____ [daughter, age 1]. She would whine and cry continually, if we'd let her. We just haven't figured out yet how to handle her. With _____ [daughter, age 8] we just point to the bedroom when she starts to cry, and she goes in there. A lot of times, she just shuts up instead of crying rather than go in her bedroom. This worked so well with her, we tried it with _____ [son, age 1½]. But no matter what happens, he just lets out three short, sharp yells -- he doesn't have time to get to the bedroom before it's over. But we just don't know what to do with _____ [daughter, age 1]. So we spent an hour and a half the other night trying to decide what to do. She cries for attention, and just to stop and look at her will please her. So no kind of punishment works; the minute she gets the attention, she's fine.

Anyway, I think you have to work together. The wife could make the decisions, handle the situation completely, and leave the husband completely out of it. But I think it is the wife's responsibility to take the husband into consideration.

Question: Do you think the age or sex of the child would influence who disciplined them?

Oh, that is a problem I suppose. I feel a child should be disciplined immediately, whatever the offense. So, when we're both there -- well, unfortunately, it turns out that whoever is the most upset over the situation disciplines. And, that I don't think is good, but that is the way it turns out in our family. This is something we're working on, to try and be more consistent and know what's going to happen in advance and then respond publicly. My response is usually a little more severe, so consequently, it's better for me to keep quiet, but I don't always do it.

Question: Who do you feel is more permissive, you or your wife?

That's interesting, because with _____ [daughter, age 8] I think my wife is more permissive. With _____ [son, age 1½] it would depend on the situation because he can do things that irritate _____ [wife] so much, and I just see a little boy in him. And I can appreciate and understand his position while _____ [wife] is completely out of patience with him. And with _____ [daughter, age 1], because of the way she does things -- when she gets irritated she hollers in a high-pitched voice -- by the time my wife has been with them all day long she is out of patience with _____ [daughter, age 1] and I view her as a cute little girl who just stepped into our lives, so I'm much more permissive with her. The other day, _____ [wife] said, "Would you paddle her for doing that?" And I said, "Oh, let's not." I think it depends on which child it is, at least in our family.

Question: Do you think the children are raised more by your philosophy or hers?

Well, initially, I had a definite philosophy and _____ [wife] didn't. So, with our first daughter, the first few years, it was my philosophy. And then since then, my wife has been going to Relief Society, and has formed some definite opinions on things. I'd say now that _____ [wife] pretty much runs things. We discuss a lot, so it's probably, oh, it's probably 50-50 now. Initially it wasn't. With our first child it definitely wasn't.

Question: Where did you get your ideas on child rearing?

Mostly as a negative response to our families' methods. Well, not entirely, but in many cases. The few things my folks did good I've carried through. For example, they started giving us allowances. With money matters, I feel very secure; and I feel I've done very well considering I've been going to school. But because of the allowance my parents gave me and my grandfather's training, I think I've done very well. And this is one of the things that carried over that was a positive. But much of the disciplining -- my parents don't discipline -- well, we do things in a negative response to the way my parents did it. If they did it, well -- it must be wrong. That sounds terrible, but I think that's the way it is.

Question: Have you done much reading on how to raise children?

Reading? No, not really. We try to play it by ear. My wife has two books. One written by Daryl Hoole, something about how to teach children, and there's a packet involved with that book. One education course I took had a lot to say about it, most of which we disagreed with. For some reason we've learned to dislike Dr. Spock because he seems to be so liberal, and when he's wrong, he seems to be so wrong. And some people quote him like he was God. In general, we think a lot of things are negative with respect to him.

Question: How much time do you spend with your children?

Well, at one time my wife decided that I was going to spend at least an hour a week with each of the children, so she'd arrange situations so this could happen. And now it turns out more that she has nights out, like Relief Society night, and Thursday nights when she goes to the genealogy library. So these nights I'm home with the kids. And we usually plan something, to do something. Like last night, my wife went Relief Society teaching and we knew in advance, and we built these things. It's usually planned; I don't spend much time with them, but the time I do is really with them, not just present in the home at the same time. Now it's at least one evening a week, and a lot of extra times turn up, like Saturday afternoons. We've tried to have them, but Saturday afternoon is not a planned thing, it's just -- you know.

Question: What about the daily care of the children when you're both home?

My wife does that. Entirely. Maybe this is a downfall, I don't say this is right. In my own mind, I'm not sure this is right, but I'm sure this is how it is. You see, this is something that could change. Now there's some things you might disagree with me on -- maybe lots of people would disagree -- but that's tough. I've already decided how it is. But on this matter I could change because I feel like I should take care of some things more. And now that we've got _____ [son, age 1½] and _____ [daughter, age 1] I do come to the rescue sometimes.

Question: What about things concerning the child's welfare such as deciding on a doctor or babysitter, or if a child is sick enough to see a doctor?

Well, the wife, of course, takes the children to the doctor if necessary because she has the time during the day. On all these matters, though, it's always been decided equally; we've discussed it. Never has one made a decision without the other one. The big reason for this, rather than being the children's concern, is the finances. We had a rule in _____ [town where they used to live] that we didn't spend anything, not even for a nickle candy bar, without discussing it. You see, that meant you couldn't have a pop on the way home, you couldn't do anything without discussing it. At the time, it was a necessity -- we didn't have the money. And we just naturally discuss anything that costs money -- and doctors do. It's a carryover.

Question: Who takes the lead in teaching the child moral values?

Well, on moral issues, like the issue should you cheat on a paper or something like this -- this is a situation which has come up. For example, _____ [daughter, age 8] used to go through and correct all the mistakes after her papers were handed back. And then, because now it was right, she'd erase the other mark and put a hundred on it. I guess this happens quite regularly in the class she's in because some of the kids have the red pencils for making corrections. And I consider it dishonest, but _____ [daughter, age 8] didn't. And these issues come up in Family Home Evening. And I'm usually conducting Family Even-

ing. As far as saying their prayers, I've participated in that as much as my wife.

Homework has been about 50-50. Well, that's not true because _____ [daughter, age 8] reads a lot to _____ [wife] and things like this. My wife is home a lot more than I am. It's just mostly who's home.

If it is really a strong moral issue, I end up with the role, but if it's just daily activities where they need help, my wife does.

Question: Is there a difference between you and your wife in the amount of physical affection you show your children, or in the manner in which you show it?

Well, I don't think there's anything alike, to be perfectly honest. The children respond differently to us -- completely differently. To _____ [daughter, age 8] she likes to wrestle and cuddle up to me on the sofa and watch television. She likes to be physically all over me. My wife doesn't put up with this -- she can't because _____ [daughter, age 8] is almost as big as she is. With _____ [son, age 1½], we try to get him to sit still in church, so I hold him. And he knows that when I hold him, he just doesn't fight it. He sits there quietly. If I'll take him in church he'll sit right there, dead still till he goes to sleep. When my wife has him, he wiggles around till he's gone. Almost any mood he's in, I can hold him and he'll go to sleep; my wife can't. I think of my son as being very cuddly. My wife says, "There's nobody in this world as uncuddly as _____ [son, age 1½]. Of course, _____ [daughter, age 1] we don't know. My wife comes closer to putting her to sleep than I do. _____ [daughter, age 1] objects very much to being held close. It's not so much that I try to hold them close -- I grab hold of them in a different way. So there's nothing alike, really.

With _____ [daughter, age 8] -- of course the other two don't talk -- we've always told her that we love her, and in both our families, our parents have never told us that they like us. And in the Home Evening Manual it tells us this is a requirement, this is something we should do. A lot of times, during discipline, when there's an issue involved, it is very important for the child to know you still love them very much, and so we've told them we love them.

I like to kiss them. I think I'm more "mushy," as my grandmother would say, than my wife is.

Question: Are you satisfied with the way your family is dividing the responsibility of raising and caring for your children?

Well, as I indicated earlier, I'm not sure I'm satisfied with the amount I take care of them. I think I should take -- not so much responsibility -- as help out. For example, when _____ [daughter, age 8] was little, my wife's sole responsibility was to take care of the home. And _____ [daughter, age 8] was all the "home" we had; consequently, she was my wife's responsibility. But now, you see, we've got a whole herd. And now it's not a matter of taking responsibility

as much as running herd. I think I'm not taking enough responsibility for their actual care. There are times when if I could perceive what was happening, I could help out. For instance, if everybody dirties their pants at the same time. And if I were more alert I would sense this and change one of them. This is something [changing diapers] I haven't done much of, but I think I should.

You ask me if I'm satisfied. The answer is no, I'm not satisfied with me. I feel like I should do more, but I somehow don't realize what needs doing until it's too late.

Question: Do you think it will change after you are out of school?

No, I don't expect anything to change because my wife is home all the time now and I'm gone, and that will still be the same. I do expect to have a bigger house so that there will be different distances between us which might make something change. For example, the kids will be spread out over more rooms.

Case 2

Personal information: Husband age 33, wife age 29; married seven years, since both were juniors in college. Husband a graduate student in audiology; wife has bachelor's degree in child development. Husband worked four years after bachelor's degree before returning for graduate work. Wife not employed. Children: three boys, 5, 3, 1. Both active in LDS Church.

Question: What do you think a father's role should be today? How much responsibility for child rearing does the father have?

Theoretically I believe it should be an even split. But the thing that I think comes out here, in my case at least, is that I'm gone a good portion of the day while the kids are awake. Consequently, it seems to me, as a student, that I can't really say that I'm doing my share as far as raising the children. You see, sometimes, I leave before they wake up in the morning and get home at 10, 11, 12 o'clock at night. Right now, she is doing the majority of the raising of the children in regards to discipline, teaching moments, and so on. When I get home I'm sort of detached and sort of have to get back in the groove of the family routine. So I'm sure I don't take enough time with them like I should, but I'm not in a position to dictate that situation. I mean, I could take more time, but at the detriment of my schoolwork. This is my general feeling anyway.

Question: About how much time do you spend with them?

Well, I spend more on the weekend than during the week, naturally. I imagine it wouldn't be more than an hour a day, outside of meals, at the most, that I spend with them. And sometimes not that much.

Question: What do you usually do when you're with them?

Well, we talk about school mainly, what they've done in school and discuss some of the things they've done. Well, for instance, I had a boy last quarter, and one this quarter, in the nursery school. So we talk about things they did in nursery school and just general conversation. You know, get acquainted with them every day. On weekends when I have a larger block of time with them we take little rides out to the airport, for example. They like to go out there. And we visit the grandparents. And our neighbors. We go on little rides with them out in the valley to the cheese factory and so on like that, out to Hardware Ranch. We like to take the little side trips that are around.

Question: Do you think it will make a difference as the children get older or you have daughters, too?

Well, I hadn't worried too much about that because I'm not planning on getting any daughters. I mean, I don't have any now -- that's the way it's turned out -- and I'm not planning on having any more. I think if I had some, my time would be spent equally with them. I don't think I'd favor one over the other; I'd try not to.

Question: Your wife disciplines and teaches, as you've said, because she's home and you're not. Is this something she goes ahead and does on her own, or do you tell her how to raise your children?

Let's take discipline for an example; We decide the kind of actions we don't particularly like, like "being smart mouthed and talking back;" we don't like that kind of thing. We like them to be respectful. And when they're not we try to prohibit that sort of thing. And we both generally agree on the kinds of things we don't want them to be saying. Sometimes they pick up swear words, and sometimes they pick up kind of nasty words, and we like to cut that out. And as far as minding and having them do things, like for example putting up their toys when they've finished with them, we kind of insist on that, and if they don't, they have to be encouraged one way or another.

Question: Where do you get your ideas on child rearing?

Well, once you've matriculated through here [USU], you take a number of courses in child development. Well, for instance, I did a report in public health, and in consulting with one of the leaders over there, she gave me some ideas. I couldn't quote them right now, but I was concerned with eating habits and went over to see her, and drew upon her knowledge about it. And generally I found it to be agreeable with what I thought. In regards to feeding, I'd like to see them eat a good meal. I don't like to see food wasted. But I understand there are a lot of problems connected with feeding and trying to force them to eat, so I don't force them to eat.

Question: Have you done much reading on your own on the subject?

What I pick up from the slick covers. I guess that's about it.

Question: Who makes decisions on things concerning the child's welfare -- doctor, babysitter?

We both make the decisions on those things. We generally try to find a good specialist in regards to the particular problem. Such as earache you go to either a pediatrician or an otolaryngologist. We like to draw on the specialists ourselves. We pretty well talk over decisions like this.

Question: Then you take quite a bit of responsibility here, even though you don't have the time to spend with them?

Right!

Question: What about things like moral training? Who takes the responsibility here?

We haven't been regular here, but we try to have family prayers. I do when the situation presents itself and I'm home; when I'm not home she does.

You know, kids will sometimes take things that don't belong to them, so we try to use stories that will bring the point out, get the point over to them that it belongs to someone else, and if you're going to take it, ask them for it, and nine times out of ten they'll tend to let you use it if you want to play with it -- you know, this sort of thing. We're not real domineering; we like to let the kids discover things for themselves. We try to teach them right from wrong.

As far as actual discipline, we both do it. I would say it is 33 per cent for me, 66 per cent for her, because she is with them more time.

She takes the responsibility when I'm not home. She doesn't consult me on everything. On things that are really important she does. Like she doesn't ask me if she should go to the store for food, that kind of thing. The general household things are left more or less up to her. The major outlays of money, we both talk about it. Like for example, buying a crib versus borrowing one, that kind of thing.

Question: What if you disagree, which way does it get done?

We try to resolve the problem by further research and general agreement. I don't think we've ever had a violent disagreement about the way the kids should be trained, or brought up. We've generally found out what was best through further research and come up with a concensus. I can't say that I've had any real problems with that at all.

Question: When your children are older, who do you think will be the one to help them with their homework, teach them talks, this type of thing?

Well, it's been my wife, and it very well may be the wife, because of the time she has and because of the time I don't have.

Question: Is there any difference between you and your wife in the amount or type of affection you show your children?

No. You mean like holding them and putting them on your lap and so on. Well, everytime I come home from school I spend some time with them. They sit on my lap; when we sit down for a moment to watch TV I have them both on my lap. When I leave in the morning if they're awake, I pick them up and hug them and kiss them before I go, generally, unless they ask for it two or three times and it would make me late for class, and I have to leave. I think we have a good relationship with our kids. We don't dislike each other.

I think you'll find that as you get older -- older kids don't like affection shown as much by their parents, especially boys. For our children, I don't feel uneasy about it at all -- she doesn't either. You know, I saw something interesting here last quarter at registration. A colored man -- a rather grey-headed colored man -- was walking hand in hand with his college student son down the sidewalk here. I thought that was rather interesting. Culture sort of says you don't do that sort of thing, and most college kids wouldn't stand for it. But this -- they must have had a good relationship.

I think it's unfortunate when a father is ashamed to be seen showing affection for his children.

Question: Are you satisfied with the way the responsibility is divided in your home?

No. I'm not satisfied, but I don't see any prospects for it to change in the next two or three years. I just can't spend the time with them.

Question: After you are out of school, will there be much difference?

It's hard to say. With my wife home all the time now and me gone, it won't be much different. Hopefully, I'll have shorter hours. Hope is eternal. You hope it will be better. I think you just about have to make it that way. It's just the way you allocate your time, good organization of time. The pressures of school are a pretty good excuse for me.

Case 3

Personal information: Husband age 35, wife age 31. Married 12 years. Husband had two years of college before marriage, finished bachelor's degree after. Worked six and a half years, then returned for graduate work. Now in last quarter of master's in field of business. Wife has a high school education; feels self conscious about lack of education. Wife worked until birth of first child, has stayed in the home since. Children: four boys, ages 9, 7½, 5, 2. Active members of the LDS Church.

Question: What do you think a father's role should be today?

My wife and I both have strong feelings about the wife being home with the children. We believe it's an equal responsibility. In the family I came from, my dad was always working. There were 13 of us, and so we very seldom saw our dad until we got old enough to go out and work with him. As a result, our mother raised us up till we were about 12 years old. I believe, well, both of us, that I should spend about as much time with the children as she does. We try to set at least one day aside, one Saturday aside, where we go out as a family and go camping or fishing or something like this. Of course, going to school is sort of an unusual circumstance. I feel that I've really neglected the children. But I've talked to them and they seem to understand that I've pretty well got to make it up to them when I get out, and spend a little more time with them. It's quite a problem. A person, as LDS, has church responsibilities to carry out, yet you have your family responsibility, and it's hard to say, well, actually I guess your family is part of the church and it should come first, yet if a person budgets his time, works things out, they can do both and not neglect their family. And also do their church responsibilities.

On disciplining the children, this has been quite a problem because the wife has had headaches quite a bit. She's allergic to dust and some pollens and things. When she gets these headaches, little things bother her and she really gets after the children, and it's kinda bothered the children. We've gone through the cycle of using the stick, of trying to use reason, of trying to be nice to them. We ended up with a paddle, although we try to keep it to a minimum -- only using the paddle after they've been spoken to a couple of times. The wife never says, "I'll have your father spank you after he gets home." She does her spanking and I do my spanking. And we try not to -- when one has made a decision and tells them to do something, we try to abide by what the other decides. We try to work it out as a family. We hold our Family Home Evening, probably not as regularly as we should, but we try to, because we feel that the children are part of our purpose of being here, to see that they turn out to be the right kind of people they should be when they grow up.

Question: About how much time do you spend with your children?

While I'm going to school, I probably spend a half hour a night with them and once a month I probably spend two or three hours on a Saturday. Sometimes maybe less than that.

Question: What do you do when you're with them?

Well, at home I sometimes read to them, sometimes talk over their schoolwork, look over their paperwork that they bring home from school. The oldest is in cub scouts and I talk over his cub scouting with him. Then we have gone roller skating, taken them to a movie a couple of times, took them up sleigh riding once, and took them camping and fishing once, a few things like this. Before I came to school, we took a trip to Yellowstone Park as a family. I really don't think I spent much more time with them before I came to school than afterwards.

Question: What about daily care when you're both home -- feeding, getting up in the night, etc.?

Of course, when they're real young, my wife takes the full responsibility for the first couple of weeks. Of course, our children are bottle fed right from the start. After the first two or three weeks I usually get up with them on Friday and Saturday nights, and she takes care of them during the week. On feeding them otherwise, we pretty well take turns at it. On changing diapers and such, I sometimes help when I get home from work to relieve her of having that problem all the time. I kinda think I probably go overboard, I don't know if she thinks so or not. When we were first married and she was working, then I helped her with the dishes and housework and then when she wasn't working, I never stopped helping -- I probably should have done. But she came from a farming family. Her father and the boys did the farming, then they'd come in and they'd just plop down and that was it. They'd eat, and that was it. They read and watch television; they don't lift a finger to help with the housework. You'd think that that would have carried on, but it didn't.

Question: Who makes decisions on taking the children to the doctor, whether or not they are sick enough to take, babysitter?

I usually give my opinion, and then she makes the decision. The doctor we usually ask around and see who the other members of the ward have for a doctor when we move into a new area. That usually influences our decision. To determine how sick they are -- if they're sick enough to go to the doctor or the hospital, that we -- well, at first we used to take them for every little cough they had, but we've got now so we can pretty well tell when they're bad enough to go to the doctor. We've got some medicine now we use when they get bad colds and some prescriptions for some other stuff, so we don't have to make as many trips to the doctor as we used to. If we have any question, we take them. Usually it's not either one of us -- we just work it out together.

Question: What about teaching the children moral values?

Well, again, we pretty well work it out together. If the wife is going somewhere during the evening, then I take them to bed and start them out on their prayers. And if we follow the Family Home Evening plan, of course the right and wrong principles come out in that pretty strongly. And we both talk to them. I talk to them more than the wife does about it. I usually make it a point at least once a year on their birthday to sit down with them and tell them what's expected of them and what temptations they'll have in life as they grow older, what they should start preparing for; basing it on age and using words and expressions they'll understand rather than talking about things that are beyond their level. As they get older this is going to be more of a problem and we'll have to be more blunt with them about what's to be expected.

Question: Does age or sex make a difference?

If we had daughters, I think my wife would do more of it with them. This is something we'd like to find out.

Question: Who helps the children with their homework?

Well, she tries to push it off onto me, but we both do it. When they were younger, before we came to school, I spent quite a bit of time with them, especially the oldest one. We wanted to get them off to a good start. I'd make these little flash cards when they were learning to read. I'd sit down with them and have them read, then I'd write down words that they couldn't pronounce and then I'd put these on the cards. When he'd get through reading we'd go through these, and before he went to bed we'd go through these again. And as a result he got to be a pretty good reader. Then me coming to school, the next boy, he got kind of neglected, and he's not in as high a reading group. We actually had more hopes for the second son than the first, but that's something that's really been neglected since I've started back in school is working with them in their schoolwork. While I'm going to graduate school it makes it really difficult. You can't squeeze by on many C's.

Question: Who helps them with talks they need to learn for Sunday School?

The wife does this mostly. She gets the talks, and if there are any problems in the doctrinal part of it, she'll come to me. She gives me the outline of the talk, and I work out the details. She spends the time with them in having them memorize them after she prepares them.

Question: Is there any difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection you show them or in the way you express it?

I think I show more affection to them than she does. She doesn't show much affection to even her family. When we moved seven or eight years ago, her mother was in tears, but it didn't bother her. And I think that she has this in her relationship to the children. She doesn't show much love and affection to them. Once in a while she'll force herself to. And as a result, because of her headaches which cause her to snap at them, I put my arm around them and show them a little more attention than I normally would.

Question: Who do they come to when they're hurt?

I think they go first to their mother when they're hurt. Whether it's because she's usually home or if they feel like they should go to their mother, I don't know. If I see them first when they're hurt, then I'll take care of them, but we both more or less take care of them.

Question: Where did you get your ideas on child rearing?

I think both of us got them from the teaching and training in our homes. And from the church -- Sunday School classes. And I'd served a mission in _____ [foreign country] and kinda got an idea of the kind of principles I'd want to pass on to the children and that.

Question: Have you done much reading on child rearing?

No, no, we haven't. I can't think of any of the literature that we've -- I have read parts on child raising, but I don't recall any particular book. The wife has this Dr. Spock on health and medical problems. But as far as having any book as a guideline, I think we've just picked up odds and ends from the Improvement Era, paper, and so on. We don't look up specific things from the educators when problems come up.

Question: If you should disagree on how to raise the children, whose way would it be done?

Well, when we do have a conflict of opinion, we try to settle it away from the children so that they don't get the idea there is any disharmony between us -- we keep them thinking that we agree so that they'll go along with it. But I think she usually wins out in a case like that. She's got a good head on her, and has a lot of logic. When she gets an idea, she's kind of stubborn; she sticks with it. But I think she usually wins out.

Question: Are you satisfied with your division of responsibility in your family?

Oh, that's pretty hard to say. I think I probably do more than my share, but if I didn't, then maybe there'd be other consequences that wouldn't be as good. They'd have greater stress put on them. This is one thing that I try to watch is that -- she's got all the household chores, and she's so particular that she's got to have everything in good shape -- if I did less work, this would put a greater burden on her, and I'm afraid that it would cause frustration. So I'd like to see her do more, see her learn to budget her time more. She's a good housekeeper and that, but seems like every Saturday we're up till 12 o'clock trying to get everything done.

Maybe it should be half and half because her job is in the home getting the dinner and the children and so on, and so in a way there'd be exceptions to it, but after a man has worked his eight hours and brought the income in, then he deserves a little relaxation; and I feel that the wife should be able to get this during the day with her work. And yet it wouldn't be fair for the husband to come home and say "I've done my work, you feed me and take care of the children and get them

ready for bed and do all the rest." But it might be more like 75 per cent of the work should be done by the wife and 25 per cent by the husband in the evening. Maybe the husband does dishes, then he's done his share. Or he puts the children to bed, some other chore. I could be wrong in this. It's not the way we're working it. We're trying to put more emphasis on the children doing their share of the work. And this is going to help a lot.

Question: Does she care for them on her own, or do you delegate this responsibility to her?

I wouldn't say that I delegate it to her. It's the responsibility of both of us. I think her responsibility is to see that they have clean clothes, and faces, and hands are clean too, and see that they are presentable when they head out for school, and see that they change their clothes when they get home. My responsibilities with them, in conjunction with the wife, are to see that they have their schoolwork done, that they choose proper playmates, and make sure that they're dealing with their brothers the way they should. I don't think this is just the wife, I think this is both of us. I don't know how you'd separate that down. The physical needs maybe are hers -- well, it's hard to separate.

Question: On discipline, do you think your control over your children is more direct or indirect?

Well, we both make the decision on what they should do and what they shouldn't do. We've been raised in similar environments, and pretty well had the same standards in our home, so we pretty well know what type of standards to pass on to the children. I think she accuses me of not disciplining them enough -- of letting them get away with things they shouldn't get away with. Like in the car, she accuses me of not sitting down on them and keeping them quiet. They seem to be a little more roudy than the average children. Of course, everyone probably thinks that. But they're always fighting and going at it. In a way I guess it's a healthy sign that they are. But she doesn't think that I get after them enough in the home either. She's always having to get after them. Part of it is because it doesn't bother me as much as it bothers her. The children have to have a certain amount of activity and wrestling to let off the steam. Living in that small apartment has been a great problem. I hope now that summer is coming they'll be able to get out a little more and I don't think they'll bother her quite so much.

Question: Do you think then you're more permissive than she is?

Oh, I think so. I let them get away with things that I shouldn't.

Question: Would age or sex make a difference?

Oh, I think we'd both be more permissive with girls if we had some than we are with the boys, but I still think I'd be more permissive with a daughter than she would. When they got to be a teenager, then I think it might change a little bit.

Question: When you're out of school, do you expect there to be any changes in the division of responsibility?

I don't think we'll change it much. We'll try to stay the same way that we have been in the past. There have been some changes, but I think they're minor, because I was gone quite a bit doing church work when we lived in _____ [northwestern state]. Here they lessen the load on you in church work. So I think it will be about the same. We're going to try -- I have an offer to go to Hawaii -- and we're hoping that the environment there will be better for the children, for a while anyway. There they don't have internal heating so you don't have as much dust floating around in the air, so maybe this will take care of her allergy problem, whatever she has. Most of hers is just her strong involvement -- ideas to resist change. If the house starts to get messed up, the tension builds up; if the kids aren't obedient, then it builds up; if she's got an assignment in Relief Society, then it builds up, and this is part of it, combining it with the household frustrations, it creates quite a problem.

Case 4

Personal information: Husband age 31, wife age 28. Both from same small town. Husband worked for four years, had two years military service before college. Worked for two years after receiving bachelor's. Now working on master's in engineering. Wife has had one year of college. She worked until their first child was born. Children: two boys, ages 3 and 4. Wife active in LDS Church, husband not active in any church.

Question: What do you think a father's role should be today?

That's hard to answer; I haven't really thought much about it. I guess I'm not too good a father right now -- I'm only home about two hours a day. But I guess mainly to provide a living so he can take care of them, and try to teach them what is right and how they should act. Right now that seems to be important -- how they act around other people. How they act at home. If you can get them to act decent there, they probably will every place else. But it's awful hard, and while I'm going to school, it's hard to be with them very much. And when I am home, they think all I do is holler, I guess. But I don't know. My wife seems to think it's important that they go to church and this kind of thing. I don't believe it quite as strongly as she does. I think that's a help too, to raise your children. She takes them over there [to church] and they come in contact with people.

I never really thought about what the role of a father should be. I don't know. I guess just make sure your children can take their place in society and get along with people; show them some sort of affection.

Question: Compared with your wife, how much responsibility do you think you actually have in the care and training of your children?

I think it probably should be as much as hers, but it really isn't. I'm not there that much. I think probably the biggest burden falls on her to see that things turn out right. I think if I had the time I would do more. I probably should make the time, but I don't. I think she does most of it. Most of the responsibility falls on her.

Question: How do you see your role in discipline?

Well, I think I'm a little more strict than she is. Maybe that's the way it should be. I don't know -- I think when I do talk to them they pay more attention to me than they do to her. Maybe it's just because she's there all the time and they've finally learned just how far they can go before she'll do anything. With me I guess they're not too sure yet. I'm probably more strict, probably demand more than she does.

Question: Who does most of the disciplining?

That's really hard to say. I can't say what she does in the daytime, but I know that when I'm home it falls to me to see that they do things. I guess she gets tired of hollering at them all day. So when we're both there, she turns it over to me.

Question: Does the type of situation make a difference?

No, I think it's just who happens to be there at the time. Of course, with two boys there, one of them always goes to her and one of them to me. I don't know -- maybe there's a little partiality. I might holler at the younger one more and she takes out after the older one because he comes to me.

Question: Do you think there will be any difference as your children get older?

I don't think so.

Question: Is your control over your children more direct or indirect?

I think it's more direct. I think they're at a stage right now that they think that whatever they do is all right as long as you don't see them. They're right at that time where they think it's all right if they don't get caught. The older one now will do things he knows he isn't supposed to, but if he doesn't get caught, he thinks it's all right. I'm trying to work on him to try to get him to understand that he has to act the same way all the time, whether you can see him or not. It's quite an experience!

Question: Who decides what's right and wrong for them to do, and when they should be disciplined?

We talk about it. We try to do the same thing so they will know what to expect. We try to decide together what they should do and what they shouldn't so we always do the same thing. If one does one thing and the other does something else, they kind of feel insecure, and don't know what to do. We try to make sure we both do the same thing. So if it's wrong, it's wrong to both parents.

Question: Are your children raised more by your philosophy or hers?

I think it's more hers because she's with them more of the time. And she's real set that they've got to go to church, and she makes sure that they go all the time. If it was up to me, I wouldn't. But I think it's good so I let her do it.

Question: Other than religion, is there much difference between you and your wife on how you think your children should be raised?

No, I don't think so.

Question: Where did you get most of your ideas on child rearing?

Well, I think you kinda look back to your own childhood and see how things happened to you. I think I'm probably doing it just like my parents did with me. I know you always say you're going to do it different, though when it comes right down to it, I think I'm probably doing just the same things my dad did.

Question: Have you done much reading on how to raise children?

No -- well, just for a psychology class I took here, that's where I got some of my ideas. But other than that, I think it's just from experiences I had as a kid. I look back, and say, "I'm doing this just the way he did it," and all the time I say, "I'm not going to do it the way he did it," but it turns out that I'm doing things just the same way my dad did.

Question: How much time do you spend with your children?

Well, during the week days I leave for school at 7:30 and come home at 5:30 and they go to bed at 8:00, so there's only that time in the evenings. On Saturdays I work all day, so the only time I see them really is on Sunday.

Question: What do you usually do when you're with them?

Oh, I usually just try and play with them. Go outside and run around a little, play with their toys and stuff.

Question: Then you actually spend the time with them, not just present in the home at the same time they are?

Oh, yes!

Question: Do you think age or sex of the children will make a difference?

Oh, I don't know. I think if I had a girl I'd probably pay more attention to her. The boys, they like their mother, they go to her all the time. I guess that's just the way it turns out.

Question: When you and your wife are both home together, who is the one to feed them, get up in the night with them, and other daily care?

She does. She always gets up with them at night. They always holler for her anyway. If I do go in, they want her anyway, so she might as well get up in the first place. I give them a bath at night because that's the only time I'm there there is something to do, and I can do something with them. I always get them ready for bed.

Question: What about feeding the children?

She does it. If it were up to me I would just give them a chance to eat, and if they wouldn't, I wouldn't worry about it. But she tries

to make sure they eat everything -- have to clean it all up. I don't know, I think if they're hungry they'll eat; if they're not, I wouldn't worry about it; but she does. If it were up to me, I'd just give it to them and give them so long to eat it. If they didn't, that would be it -- they could just wait till the next meal. She just keeps after them, so . . .

Question: What about things concerning the child's welfare, such as choosing a doctor, or a babysitter, and deciding when they should go to the doctor?

Well, she has chosen the doctors. Sometimes I tell her not to go. She's the type to go no matter what happens -- if they had a runny nose, she'd go. I try to talk her out of it some of the time. I don't think they need to go quite as often as she'd take them. She's the one that goes with them to the doctor.

NOTE: Throughout this part of the discussion, in talking about his wife doing the daily care part of raising the children, the subject spoke in obviously a wistful, almost sad voice, implying very evidently that he wished he could have more say-so in the matter. He acted as though he really would like to take more of a lead in the rearing of his children, but just couldn't do it. He stated that his wife feels very strongly that rearing the children is her job -- she quit work when the first child was born because "She said she should be with the children all the time." He acted like he didn't want to oppose her in what she insisted was her realm of responsibility, but very much wished he could take some of this responsibility himself. He did mention later that he hoped after he was out of school and had more time, his wife would let him do more.

Question: What about teaching moral values?

We both try and do that -- make sure they tell the truth, etc. For about the first three years they're not smart enough to tell a lie. Right now, though, this oldest boy is four, and he's found out that if he doesn't tell the truth, he's going to get away with things. Right now we're trying to convince them that they should tell the truth.

Question: Do you work with them as much as your wife?

You bet!

Question: What about teaching them to say prayers?

She does this. The children say them. Anything about religion, she insists upon it.

Question: What about helping them with homework when they get in school?

Oh, I'd like to do that! I probably will. I read stories and things to them, and books, to both of them.

Question: Is there any difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection you show your children, or the manner in which you show it?

I think so. I think she shows more affection than I do. I'm sure that's the way it is. I'm sure they'd go to her for comfort if they were hurt or anything. Same way at night -- they go to her first. If I go to them, they still want her.

Question: Does age or sex of the child influence the affection you show?

No, I don't think so.

Question: Are you satisfied with the division of responsibility in your family for caring for your children?

Well, not the way it is right now. I think I should spend more time with them. And help more -- but I'm just not home. I think I'm missing out on something by going to school while they're at this age. I had more time when I was working, but they were real little then. Now when I am home, I should be studying -- always looking in some book, you know.

Question: Do you think it will be different when you get out of school?

I hope it will! I think it will. I think I'll be able to spend more time. I think they don't think they have a father now. They think I'm just a visitor now [laughter].

Question: But you do spend time with them when you are home?

Oh, yes! My wife pretty well takes care of them, but I spend quite a bit of time with them when I am home.

Question: When your wife is home and you're not, does she go ahead and care for them on her own, or do you consider this your responsibility which you delegate in part to her?

I think she just does it. This is her job and she just goes ahead. As soon as we had the first child, she said she wasn't going to work anymore. That it was her job to take care of them, and that's what she does.

Question: If you and your wife should disagree strongly on some point of child rearing, whose way would it be done?

Well, that's hard to say. Probably while I'm there they'd do it my way, but while I'm gone I don't know. I think it would still be done my way -- when it comes right down to it, it would be done the way I wanted.

Question: Then you're really the "boss" when it comes right down to it, as far as raising the children?

Right -- I think so. Well, yes -- I'm sure of it.

Case 5

Personal information: Husband age 34, wife age 34. Husband worked seven years after receiving bachelor's degree, now finishing a master's in education. Now has graduate assistantship. Wife has bachelor's in home economics, now finishing another in another field, and plans to do graduate work. Wife has worked off and on since marriage, now teaching half time and going to school part time. Children: boy 9, girl 8, boy 6, girl 3. Both active in LDS Church.

Question: What do you think a father's role should be today?

Well, I think the role of the father is quite a demanding one at the present time, and for the mother, too, because of the trend for both parents working. And this -- I've been against this, and I still am as far as that goes -- but our children are mostly in school except the baby, and so it isn't quite such a hardship on them where she teaches just half a day. But the role of the father is one it seems to me is getting more demanding all the time. Jobs are demanding more. I think church work isn't demanding any more, but maybe community service is. And I think that with education, all these things, a father's role is pretty busy. I try to spend time with the children, but it's pretty hard under these circumstances. I'll be glad when we get settled in a job and are through with school. I'm not sure that we'll have more time then than we have now, but I'm hoping that will be the case.

I think this change [in family and society] we're talking about is one that will see gradually more leisure time, I really do. I think we'll have to educate for more leisure time, although I'm not in that situation -- we hear a lot about it, but -- these changes come on us so slow. I think the way to see change is to look backwards rather than forward. If you look back a few years you can see a drastic change.

Question: How much responsibility do you think a man has toward the rearing of his children?

Well, I think he has a 50 per cent responsibility -- at least that much; and I think he has the full responsibility, I think the whole responsibility belongs to the father. He should be the head of the house and make final decisions after talking it over with the wife, and I think a wife's role is becoming more demanding -- she has more things to do -- and because of that I think it has to be a cooperative effort in rearing the family.

Question: In your family, how is the responsibility actually divided?

Well, we share the responsibility. Because we're both busy, we share in the household chores. And the children have duties of their own to do. And in a way I think this is good because the children are learning

responsibility that maybe otherwise they wouldn't get. I think all children should have a few responsibilities -- as long as it isn't too much. And in our home it has to be a cooperative effort. It couldn't be anything else at the present time.

Question: When it comes to discipline, how do you see your role as a father, compared to your wife?

I have a firm philosophy on discipline. I'm a firm believer in disciplining at the time it needs to be done. I don't believe in putting discipline off till Dad gets home. I think discipline should take place when it's needed. And so this again is a cooperative effort. I think she does just as much or more disciplining than I do because she's around them somewhat more than I am.

When I'm home, I usually take the lead in discipline, and if I'm gone she takes care of it at the time. I don't let her put things off until I get home. I think that's a waste of time. If we're both home, then I would be the one usually to do it.

Question: Does the age or sex of the child make a difference?

No. I treat my daughters just about like I treat my sons. I can't see much difference in treatment.

Question: Who is the most permissive?

My wife. [No hesitation in his answer at all.]

Question: Do you think your control over your children is more direct or indirect?

Well, I don't make the decisions then let her carry them out, if that's what you mean. My wife and I see pretty well on discipline. We know what we want for our children and the kind of lives we want them to lead and so, consequently, I think our ideas are pretty much idealistic towards our goal.

Question: Are they raised more by your philosophy or hers?

We don't have any drastic differences. I think we get along pretty well. And we both have similar backgrounds. We were both raised in small communities -- as a matter-of-fact, we were both raised on farms, same religion, same interests. And I think because of this we're together pretty well. I think our philosophies coincide pretty well, and if there are differences, they're minor. And I don't think this makes too much difference in our handling of the children.

Question: If there should be a major difference, whose way would it be done?

Well, I couldn't really answer that. We've never had that kind of difference. We always resolve our problems pretty well. I just don't know how to answer that because we've really never had a major decision to make. We respect each other. And if she makes a decision that I don't

think is quite right, I'll talk it over with her, but never around the children -- I mean we might talk it over. But we've never had to have this happen very often. We've been quite congenial in this respect, I think.

Question: What do you think has had the most influence on your ideas on child rearing?

Well, I think probably the way I was raised has had a lot to do with it. I find myself doing things pretty much the way my father did -- the way he disciplined and handled our family pretty well carries over into my discipline. And like I say, my wife and I aren't too far apart on it, so I'd say this is probably true for both of us.

Question: Have you done much reading on the subject?

Mostly just church; publications by our church authorities and in school, child development and this type of thing. My wife's had a lot of child development work and I'd have to say that education has played a part, too. I think I can see this influence. In fact, I know it exists, but it's pretty hard to put your finger on. It's probably evolved into our philosophy. That's what's happened, I'm sure. The church helps us educate our children -- the Primary, Sunday School -- although I don't believe in turning it all over to them, it's sure a big help to have worthwhile organizations like this where you know your children are getting the right training. And I appreciate that.

Question: How much time do you spend with your children?

Well, on a weekday, I think probably an hour and a half before bedtime. That is just about all the time I get to spend with them. And then in the morning I usually get up and read -- I read to the children while my wife fixes breakfasts in the mornings. We've read a Bible stories series lately. We read things the kids want to hear. If they have a book from school they want to hear, occasionally we do this. Mostly, though, it's been Bible stories. So, in the mornings for 45 minutes or so, and then in the evenings for an hour to an hour and a half. Then on weekends, usually we spend more time together. I'd say three or four hours maybe on weekends.

Question: What do you do during this time, besides the reading in the morning?

Well, we all watch "Cheyenne" -- we have to because the kids insist on it. Then occasionally we read. Mostly it's just -- well, we just get together. Sometimes we pop popcorn or have family evenings. We do this occasionally. We take them to the show occasionally.

Question: Would you say that in the evenings you're actually spending time with them rather than just being present in the home at the same time your children are?

Well, I'd say both situations exist. It's pretty hard to spend all the time with them unless you plan it. I think we're all that way, you

don't get much done unless you plan it. We could plan more than we do, I'm sure, but we do make it a point to spend some time with them.

Question: Does the age or sex of the child make any difference?

Yes, it does. The little children don't like to hear the same stories the bigger children do. We usually try to give the children time alone with one or the other of us at nights. We don't do it all the time, but quite regularly we'll take the little children separate from the bigger ones and read smaller stories or sing songs with them, or something they like to do. No, we can't treat them all alike. In some instances, I think in a family evening they all seem to enjoy that, about the same. I think we do have to recognize the difference, though. We can't treat them alike. They're different individuals -- they have their individual needs. We try -- I'm sure we don't succeed -- we try to spend time doing what they want to do.

Question: How do you divide up the daily care of the children?

In the mornings I fix breakfast occasionally. Well, I shouldn't say that -- it isn't really true. I fix breakfast occasionally and my wife reads to the children occasionally, but usually it's the other way around. There's no problem on feeding them now because they are all able to feed themselves. My wife has to leave early to go to school -- she leaves at 15 to 8, and I have to take _____ [daughter, age 3] to the babysitter or bring her to nursery school, and I get the children off to school. Of course, most of this is already taken care of before my wife leaves for school. Then I try to be to school by 15 to 9. We have to cooperate in order to get things done when we're both working like this.

Question: Before you came back to school and your wife was home all day, did she take care of them then more than now?

Well, no, not always. Usually when the children are sick, though, they want their mother, and she does spend more time at night. And -- but I do get up occasionally with them when they're little, but I think she gets up more than I do. I guess I'd have to give her the edge all the time, about 60-40 all the time.

Question: Who makes decisions like choosing a doctor, deciding if they should see a doctor, or a babysitter?

My wife takes care of that pretty much. She wouldn't be happy unless she was the one to choose, and I let her do that. She has good judgment.

Question: Who would stay home with a sick child?

That's a good question -- we haven't had the situation develop yet. In our previous experience -- we've both taught school at different times -- it hasn't always been that way. But during that time, _____ [my wife] was the one. She stayed home if something was needed, children sick or something.

Question: Who teaches the child moral values?

Both of us. I think that's pretty well mutual.

Question: What about teaching the children to say prayers?

Usually the one that puts the child to bed sees to it that they say their prayers. This could be either one of us.

Question: Who helps them learn talks for Sunday School, and this type of thing?

Both of us, but my wife would have the edge there -- probably 70-30.

Question: What about helping the children with homework?

We haven't had any -- of course the children aren't to the age where they bring very much home. But we both have, on occasions. I'd say this is pretty well mutual.

Question: Is there any difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection you show your children or the manner in which you show it?

Well, there's one thing we have to be awfully careful of because we both come home irritable, you know, from work sometimes. And usually if I'm in a bad mood, she'll take over. If she's in a bad mood, she tells me maybe I should do something and we work it out pretty much that way. We both are careful -- most of the time. Occasionally we don't follow through that way, but usually.

Question: Who is the one most likely to comfort a child if he is hurt and you are both there?

This depends on the child. When a child comes in hurt, they want somebody. And my smaller children now very often go to my oldest daughter when they come in hurt. But when they're growing and developing sometimes they want their mother and sometimes they want their dad; again I think it's pretty much mutual, depending on the needs of the child, which one they may want.

Question: Do you both hold them, hug them, etc., about the same?

Oh, yes. I don't feel ashamed in any way to hold my children.

Question: Are you satisfied with your arrangement for dividing up the responsibility of raising your children?

No. I think that mothers are more in demand in the home. Under the present situation, though, I'm pleased with it. But I hope the situation will change where my wife can spend more time in the home. I think especially while we have little children this is best -- as much as possible. There are times -- I know we wouldn't be back to school right now if it wasn't for the fact that my wife worked and helped save money, so I think it depends on the situation. Right now the situation demands

it and we try to change to meet the situation. In the future the situation might change where we can have the mother in the home more. I think the mother's influence with little children is more influential than the father's, I really do.

When I get out of school, I would hope she can be home with the children all the time.

Question: You've said you divide things up about equally now because you are both gone about the same amount. If your wife was home all the time, would she go ahead on her own and take care of the children, or do you decide together, or do you delegate the responsibility to her?

Oh, when she's home, she's in complete charge. She, I guess, runs it on intuition. I've got a lot of respect for her and I'm sure that the decisions she makes will be all right.

Question: Do you feel like you're the head of the family anyway?

Oh, yes. I don't think she'd do anything that she knows I disapprove of -- I'm sure she wouldn't.

I think it would be a real difficult task for a man to raise a family by himself -- if the mother would die, or divorce, or something else. I think that this would be very pathetic because a father has to be away from home; his job demands it. And if this were the case -- if something like this should ever develop -- I'd make every effort to find a suitable baby-sitter or something of this nature, and this would have to be because whoever is left with the children has to be somebody you would trust to do the things you'd have them do -- take care of the children the way you'd like it done, or at least as nearly that way as possible. I'm very concerned about how they're raised. I would be very much concerned.

Case 6

Personal information: Husband age 25, wife 28; married for three years. Husband working on master's in science. Husband has assistantship this year for first time. Wife has had one year of business school, some college. She works full time. Children: two girls, age 9 and 8, hers from a previous marriage. Couple recently lost a baby; want very much to have more children. Both active in LDS Church.

Question: What do you think a father's role should be today?

Well, I'm a little bit biased, in a way, because my point of view is based on my faith, being LDS. I guess this would make me a little bit different. But my idea of a father, of course, is that he is the head of the home. Now in our home all final major financial decisions are made by myself. Of course, on anything of major consequence, I consult my wife. In many cases, she makes the suggestion in the first place, and I decide whether we can afford it or not. But I think that the father definitely has to make the final decisions. But I think that any father that makes a decision without first consulting his wife isn't much of a father -- he isn't much of a leader either. So often, it's the same story, you can't see the forest for the trees. You need someone else's point of view to bring out things you don't see, and it's kind of like a counseling process. My wife sees a lot of things I don't see, and vice versa, and by getting her ideas as well as mine, I should be able to make an intelligent decision. But all the decisions, ultimately, are made by myself. My wife lets me do this -- I guess she has confidence in me. Maybe so far I haven't made many mistakes, but she definitely gives me a lot of good advice and usually starts me on the path. In fact I wouldn't be back to school if it weren't for her. I made the decision, but she was the driving force behind it. She convinced me that this is what I ought to do. I'd already had a couple of years of college, and I had the potential to finish, and to make a good living for my family; she and I both felt I had to come back to school. She felt very strongly about it, and she said she'd be willing to continue working as long as I'd stick with the schooling and get good grades. And fortunately I've been able to do this. So it's worked out pretty good.

One might think that with my wife earning the bulk of the money that she would pretty well control things. Until the last year, she's made almost every cent we've made. And of course, this year I went on a teaching assistantship and make a fairly substantial amount of money myself now -- in fact it's almost even, she still makes a little more than I do. One might think that she would pretty well control things, but she's allowed me to handle all the money. I pay all the bills; I handle the money. Whenever she wants or needs money, she comes to me. I either give it to her, or if she wants to go shopping, I just give her the check-book and let her go, but I do control the finances.

And, like I say, most of the major decisions I make -- where we live and the things that we do, decisions that are made in the home. I usually assign the tasks to the girls. Of course they're big enough now where they can help a lot and I work out sort of a work routine for them so they have certain tasks that they're responsible for and they have to do. And now they've reached an age where we pay them an allowance. Part of this is to teach them how to use their money and to pay their tithing. I take care of this myself. And I do most of the disciplining of the children. One of the reasons for this, I feel, is that my wife is working. I actually spend more time with the children than she does. But major discipline problems are left to me. She disciplines them at times, but whenever she has trouble, she uses the threat of me to keep them in line; or else she just comes to me and then I take care of it. It seems to work out better this way. In some respects I don't like it because sometimes the children get to the point where they won't pay much attention to their mother. But as long as I back her up, for the most part they obey her.

Question: When you're both home, would you be the one, then, to discipline the girls?

Yes, definitely. In 99 per cent of the cases.

Question: If she was home alone, would she do it then, or postpone it till you get home?

Usually she tries to handle it herself. I like her to, because I want the children to respect her as well as me. It's bad to allow the father to do all the disciplining because then he gets the "bad guy" image. I like to have her handle her own problems in this respect and, of course, if she comes up against something she can't handle, then it's my job to do it. The children are getting older now and they pretty well do what she says because they've learned that if they don't, they'll have to answer to me in the end.

Question: Do you think they're raised more by your philosophy or hers?

Well, ideally, I hope they're raised by both of our philosophies. But I'm afraid they're raised more by mine.

Question: Is there much difference between your philosophies?

Very little. I think I'm a more strict disciplinarian than she is -- I'm more strict with the children; she's more lenient.

Question: You mean she lets them get away with more?

Well, not really. She has a greater ability to empathize with the children; she can put herself on their level easier than I can.

My father was a strong father image. When there was disciplining to be done, he would discipline severely. I knew that when he said something, I'd better listen to him. And when mother did it, oh, 50 per cent

of the time, I could pass it by and she'd have to fall back on dad to help her out. I think I inherited some of this -- I don't think I could help but not. There are many times when I realize I'm more strict with the children than I should be. And then I have to unbend a little bit, and try to realign myself. With my wife, though, like I say, she has a greater ability to empathize with the children. She keeps telling me, "Well, you were a kid once, and you used to do these things, now you won't let your kids do them."

Well, every parent, ideally, wants his children to be better than he was. And I want my children to avoid the mistakes that I made. But too often we try to mold them, mold them into a perfect individual, but you can't. You have to leave them alone enough to have their own individuality and their own self expression, within a framework. You don't want to really force them down a certain path, but you have to set boundaries on the side and let them move back and forth within them. Of course, there's certain things that you've got to forbid them to do and teach them that are wrong -- like stealing or fighting with them or ostracizing them from their little group -- things like this. This sort of thing you have to forbid, but you can't make them do things exactly the way you did them or the way you think they ought to be done all the time. Give them a general outline of what you want them to do, of what you expect of them, and I think your children will respond.

Children like to be guided; like to feel that somebody's there to help them out if they run into trouble. But still they like to do it themselves. They get a sense of accomplishment out of it if they have a little of their own free will. I know my oldest daughter has a lot of creativity in her; she likes to work around the house. And if you tell her to vacuum the floor or clean the bathroom and just let her do it, she'll do it fine. She might not do it exactly the way you'd do it, and you may not like the way she did it, but she'll do a good job of it. And when she gets done she feels like she's accomplished something and you've got the job done; you don't have much to complain about. But if you don't allow your children an opportunity to grow, then you're going to blunt them and when they go out into society they just won't be able to handle it.

They've got to develop responsibility. This is one of the biggest faults that I find with parents today and parents of a few years ago, is that they don't teach their children the value of good work. They give them too much and they don't teach them that they should work and earn what they get. Not that you should make your children work to earn their food or clothing or lodging, but you should give them a little responsibility like doing the dishes or making their bed every morning when they're big enough. My girls are responsible for their own room. I go in every so often to inspect it to see how well they're keeping it, because if I didn't, it would probably become a shambles, but I try to get them to have pride in their room and tell them they should keep it clean, and every now and then I go in and remind them. But that room is theirs. If they want to go in there and color, go in there and play, they can do it. And they can stack stuff in there as much as they want, as long as they keep it neat enough so I don't get killed when I walk in to take a look. I don't want them to throw clothes all over the floor.

This is one of my little pet peeves, not putting your things away when you're done with them. Once in a while I do it myself and my wife reminds me. But I've been trying to teach the girls this because I can see the value in it. It teaches them to be good housekeepers and any man that marries them eventually is going to want a good housekeeper; he'll want a wife that knows how to cook and take care of things. As they grow up, I hope that they'll learn these things. They're already real good at washing and drying dishes. I know they're not going to have any trouble here. _____ [daughter, age 9] has got to the point now where she likes to cook -- but you have to teach your children these things. If you don't prepare them for life in the home, they're probably not going to get it anywhere else.

Their spiritual values are the same way. As far as I'm concerned, if you don't teach the gospel in the home, you're taking a mighty big chance that they're going to pick it up somewhere else. The home is the place to teach this.

Question: All these things you've mentioned, teaching them the different values -- who does the actual teaching in your family?

I do most of the time; I do most of the teaching. My wife, of course, teaches them things that have to do with the womanly arts like cooking -- I'm not much of a cook; my wife is a really good cook, and she teaches them this sort of thing. And she helps me teach them their spiritual values. In fact, sometimes I think she's a better example than I am. But a good share of the time the teaching is done by me, or when she does it, she does it for me.

Like I said, I assign them their tasks of responsibility. And whenever we go on a cleanup campaign in the house, the majority of the time, I give them their tasks to do. Although if I'm at school or something I guess my wife takes care of it. But I usually suggest to her that she give the children something to do -- that there are certain things that ought to be done. For instance, about every third Saturday I put them to work cleaning their room and usually I'm not here when they do it, so I tell my wife in the morning that it's just about time, that their room is looking pretty bad, and that she should have them do this.

Question: Things are generally done under your direction, even though she's the one that carries them out?

Yes, I think that's a fair statement. Most of the time this is the way it is. I don't try to limit my wife's initiative by any matter of means, but, I don't know, maybe my wife is different than some, but she would be pretty upset with me if I didn't make the majority of the decisions and do the leading. I honestly believe that this is what I should be doing and she submits herself most of the time to me and encourages me to take the lead. Of course, it would be difficult for me to do this if she didn't have this attitude. We'd probably be at odds with each other most of the time, and every time I turned my back, she'd be trying to subvert me and change little things every chance she got just to irk me. She doesn't do this.

I wouldn't say my wife's the type of woman that likes to be dominated because she's extremely independent. She has had to work for a long time and earn her own way. This is her second marriage -- I'm her second husband. She was divorced from her first husband and as a result of this, when I first met her she was a divorcee and had the two girls, and she was pretty independent. She had to fend for herself for so long, and now she can depend on me more, and she's kind of lost the desire to be domineering or to direct, and she's allowed me to take this over, slowly but surely. Until now she pretty well leaves it up to me. But in the first year of our marriage there were times when we clashed somewhat because she did have this independent spirit -- she'd been on her own for quite a while and she had to make the decisions herself, she had to play father and mother both, and it was hard for her to give up this father role for the first little while. But eventually she did this, and now we don't have these clashes any more, fortunately.

Question: If you should have a disagreement on how the children should be raised, who would be the one to win out?

Oh, eventually I'm sure that I'd have to make the final decision. And she might not agree with it, but she'd go along with me. Like I said, she accepts me as the head of the home and there are times, I'm sure, when she might disagree with my decisions, but she'll submit to them.

Question: What has had the most influence on your ideas on how children should be reared?

I think the church and family are about it. I've had a different, more expanded concept of the role of a father since I became a member of the LDS Church and became a bearer of the Priesthood. Of course, the church teaches this role and goes to great lengths to explain it to us just what is expected of us as a father. And, in fact, several of the lessons we've had in Priesthood last year and this year have been to point out to us our responsibility as a father: what our family should expect of us, what we should expect of ourselves, and what the Lord expects of us, and I can't help but feel that this has had a great effect on me as a father; it couldn't help but have.

And then my own family. I can always remember my own father and the way he handled things, and I still have the greatest respect for my father. I really listen to him when he talks to me. I don't always take his advice, but I respect his position and I think he knows I do. He doesn't make use of his fatherly authority very often, in fact rarely now, but he does know -- I'm sure that he feels -- that I respect and listen to him.

And from observing my grandparents -- I lived with them for 13 years -- my grandmother in later years opposed my grandfather in many things. I realize the danger that can enter into a husband-wife relationship and can upset the family as a whole if this happens. And I've seen this happen to families that live around us where they disagree on discipline and it's had a detrimental effect on the children, and it has also strained the marriage relationship.

Discipline of children has a tremendous effect on them. I'm a firm believer in "If you spare the rod you spoil the child." Not that you should beat your children once a day just so they will stay in line, but when they need discipline, you give them discipline, and it gives them a sense of security. I don't care what any psychologist tries to tell me about raising my children; I know the effect that it has. And your children don't hate you for doing that. Nine times out of ten, they'll respect you twice as much; and, well, they'll just come apart if they don't know how far they can go. If you set boundaries for your children and if you're fair about it. This is another thing I've found is important. You have to be fair with your children. They expect you to be fair, and if you're not they'll let you know about it. My girls let me know. They'll say, "It's not fair -- you let _____ do it;" or "Why can _____ do it and I can't." And then, of course, you're caught. You've got to defend your position or you've got to give in, one of the two. Maybe there were extenuating circumstances why you let the one do it and you can't let the other, but you have to be fair with them, and they'll respect you for it. My own personal opinion is that this is a good share of the problem of children today, and this includes the young teenagers, some of them that are having so much trouble. I don't think they've been properly disciplined when they were children. They have no feeling of security -- their parents never did anything for them but raise them and feed them and throw them out anything they wanted, and didn't teach them the value of work. I've seen a lot of kids that sure didn't know how to do very much and they didn't have any sense of responsibility, and this is what work teaches you. You've got to have a responsibility and you've got to have been disciplined so that you, when you go out into society, you know that certain things are expected of you and there are certain things you cannot do.

Question: How much time do you usually spend with your children?

I may spend somewhere between three and four hours a day with them -- waking hours. I'm usually with them an hour or an hour and a half in the morning; well it depends on the day, maybe three hours, three and a half hours in the evening. I usually get home at 5:00 or 5:30 in the evening. They go to bed at 8:00 on weeknights, and 8:30 on weekends.

Question: What do you usually do when you're home with them?

Well, quite often I study. It depends. I've recently decided that I don't get much done till they go to bed anyway, I mean it's kind of foolish to try to study, so sometimes I play games with them, not as much as I should I suppose. Sometimes we watch television together -- I don't know if you call it much of a relationship or not, but there are certain shows we watch together. In the morning, of course, we're spending most of our time getting ready to go to school -- all three of us to school; my wife has already gone to work. I get the girls off to school.

On the weekends, during the daytime they're big enough now that they go out and play. They have several friends in the neighborhood, and they'll go out and play. Sometimes we're together, it just depends. I think I probably spend more time with them on Sunday than I do any other

day of the week. That's when we usually have our family night. We spend an hour, hour and a half, at least together on this, doing things together, and sometimes we go visiting together on Sundays. It's a little hard to go to Sunday School together. We usually end up splitting up. But we all go to Sacrament meeting together. I think this is a good thing -- it's best to try to go to church together.

Sometimes on weekends, if there is a good movie, and they're getting few and far between any more, we like to go to them together. My wife and I don't particularly like to go to movies by ourselves. We prefer to take the children with us. We try not to go to movies that we couldn't take the children with us and feel comfortable. But as the summertime comes along, we usually spend more time together. During the school year it's difficult -- they go to school all day and I go to school all day, and I usually have to study nights. My wife works all day. And the weekend is the only time we're together. She's with them most of the time on weekends. Of course, she's home from work then. This is her chance to catch up with them and renew her relationship with them. She spends more time than I do with them on the weekends, although during the week I'm with them more than she is. So I guess it kind of balances out a little bit.

Question: How do you divide up the daily care of the children?

They can pretty well take care of themselves now, far as eating and dressing and those things, cleaning up after themselves.

Question: What about decisions on which doctor you choose and whether or not they should go to the doctor?

Well, as to whether they go to the doctor, usually I make that decision, although sometimes my wife does if she feels that they need to go. And usually we try to decide between us which doctor they're going to go to although my wife has always picked their dentist and I rarely, if ever, go to a dentist -- I don't have to. So she makes the decision as to what dentist they go to, she sets up the appointments for them. She almost always takes them. I never go unless she can't.

Question: Now that you both have obligations outside the home, who would stay home with a sick child?

She stays home. This has happened several times and she's stayed home and taken care of them.

Question: Who helps them with homework?

Usually I do. Ninety per cent of the time.

Question: Is there any difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection you show them or the way you express it?

I think my wife is more affectionate than I am -- I think most mothers are. Not that this should necessarily be so, but I think my

wife definitely is more affectionate than I am. I try to be; I think I've improved in this area; I think I continue to improve as time goes by, but I think she is much more able to express herself in this respect than I am.

Question: Do you think the age or sex of the child would have an influence on affection?

I think probably so. I'm pretty human in this respect. Of course, most men would like to have a son -- I'd like to have one -- we've been trying; haven't had much luck yet, but I think a son would hold a special spot. I would try not to favor a son over my daughters, and you should try to never favor a newer child over an older one, but this is sometimes hard to do, especially when they're young. You know, you show them more affection because at that time they need more, but sometimes we don't realize that the older children need it to. And sometimes they become neglected. This is often the case. A couple that has several children spread out over a number of years and then has one that comes up on the end, the youngest, usually from what I've observed, will treat this child much better than they did any of the others -- give them more material things, much more affection, than any of their older children. They know it's the last child and the others have usually left home or are moving on. I have one case in mind where this has happened and has caused no end of trouble for the parents, for the child involved, and for the other children as well. But it does happen, and this is one of the problems we have as parents. I haven't had to face this problem, but I'm sure that one of these days I'm going to, and I think it's going to be a tough one to surmount.

You have to be able to divide your love and to realize that each child has his moments. Just with these two girls alone, there are times when one of them needs more affection than the other, and I can see that. One of them gets sick, of course you naturally put forth a little more effort to take care of that child, and I've noticed at times that the other one will feel a little neglected and will try to do things to try to gain attention. You have to watch things like this and when they start devising little ways to get your attention, well, then you'd better give them a little extra love and affection, and this will usually take care of it.

Question: Are you satisfied with your arrangement for dividing up the responsibility for raising your children?

Well, it would be better, I think, if my wife didn't have to work. I'd probably be able to answer that better if she didn't. For the arrangement we've got, I think it's pretty good. I feel, anyway, that it's worked out pretty well. I think she'd probably go along with me. I would like to see my wife spend more time with the children.

Question: Do you expect changes after you're out of school?

I think there will be changes. There's bound to be. She'll be home more of the time and she'll spend more time with them.

Where she'll be home all the time, I think that she's going to pick up more authority with the children and I think her weight is going to

be felt a little more, although the basic plan in the home I don't think is going to be changed too much. I think I'll pretty well make the decisions -- all the major decisions. And I think I'll always handle the financial matters. My wife isn't too enthused about handling them and I kind of like to keep control of the financial end of it. She's pretty well let me and I think I always will.

She'll be home more, and will do more of the actual taking care of the children and I'll be gone from home as much or more. But the responsibility will still be mine and the children will still be raised under my direction to a large extent, even though I'm not with them much.

I'm sure that any major discipline problems will be handled by myself, especially if she has trouble. As they get older they're going to be a little harder to control -- older kids are. And I think it's going to be more difficult for her to do it. She asked them not too long ago why they would listen to me more than they would to her, and one of them made the remark that I hit harder than she did. This does have an effect, but I think that in the future that my disciplining of them is going to become more important. If the groundwork is laid now as far as discipline and things, and this is my goal, and I'm sure my wife's as well, then we shouldn't have too many major problems when they become older because the pattern will be set for them and they'll pretty well know what we expect of them. In general behavior. There's always going to be specific problems that pop up now and then that you're going to have to legislate on.

Oftentimes, I feel like a judge hearing a case and I have to make a decision on what you hear, and this is a problem. You've got to sit down and listen and get both sides of it. I've found that to make a hasty decision strictly on appearances alone, for convenience sake, that you often make a wrong decision and it has an adverse effect on the children, and can have an adverse effect on your wife, too. But you've got to learn to sit down and hear both sides of it, especially when it's a quarrel between the two girls. You've got to hear both sides of it before you can make a decision, or else you may look like a fool. And it goes back to this business of being fair; if you're not fair, your children won't have any respect for you.

Children really idolize their parents I think if they're taught properly, and for many years they feel you don't make mistakes -- you just couldn't. And when you do make mistakes, it really hurts their faith in you. And as they grow older, of course, they realize that you're only human and that you make mistakes. And if you're willing to admit your mistakes and then correct them, then they have even greater respect for you and then they become more willing to admit theirs. This is one thing that's really hard is to get children to admit their mistakes. And it's hard to get an adult to do it. It's human nature, you don't want to admit you've made a mistake. And it's pretty hard for me to do, too. And so this is another area of child discipline that's difficult.

Case 7

Personal information: Husband and wife both age 36; married twelve years. Husband working on doctor's degree, teaching half time at USU. Wife a full-time lecturer at USU. Husband taught for six years before returning to school; wife has worked about one-third of their married life, mostly since he returned to school. Children: girl 10, boy 7, boy 5. Both Catholic; wife a very staunch member, husband changed from Protestant at time of marriage but accepts doctrines only as a good example for the children.

Question: What should the role of a father be today?

Of course, I'm sort of old fashioned, I suppose, in many ways. I still believe, for example, that it is the man's responsibility for being the head of the household even though the wife may work. Maybe this isn't always the case. I don't believe in, well, not really equality such as this 50-50 stuff. I just feel that a man always has more responsibility in many ways. We find, for example, that it is my role for most of the discipline. Of course, maybe this is my background because my father disciplined me where my mother didn't. And I don't know if this is really what it should be today. I've heard a lot -- read a lot, of course -- about different things, but I still feel that this is part of the role the man must play. I think the role is changing somewhat because the wives work. I find myself that I have to engage in womanly chores and -- not that I mind it; matter of fact I like some of them -- I just feel that because my wife works, her time is occupied quite a bit by other things, so I have to vacuum the floor occasionally, and I have to do the dishes, and I have to do the washing, and, of course, this is doubly true now that we're going to school. It makes quite a bit of difference. But this role changes because when she doesn't work, then I don't feel myself obligated quite as much to do this sort of thing.

Question: How much responsibility do you feel a father has in the rearing of his children?

Well, in a situation where my wife is not working, during the daytime of course the responsibility is mostly hers -- I'm sure all. However, when I come home from work -- and when I had a normal job I used to come home between 4:00 and 4:30 most of the time -- I think from then until supper time it was pretty much my responsibility, to establish a little rapour for the day, let's say. I think after supper, oh, I'd guess maybe the male has more to do with influencing the children. However, when she's working I find my responsibility then is more continuous throughout the day. For example, on Monday, Wednesday, and Friday when I don't come to school till 10:00, she makes the breakfast, then it's my responsibility to clean the house, make the beds, get the kids dressed, two of them off to school, get the other one ready to go out and play. Tuesdays and Thursdays this becomes her task to do -- you know how this goes. At night when I come home from school, when it's been my busy day,

I find that I'm not as eager to partake in doing things with the kids because I feel that I've put in my day and I'm tired. And I think on those days she probably has the responsibility with the kids. I don't know. It's kind of hard to explain. I think it's pretty well divided equally in actual practice. I think, too, it presents a problem for the kids in the fact that men and women are different as far as discipline goes, as far as the role they portray, and I think it's hard on children to be able to change from one to the other and not establish a real routine such as I experienced when I was growing up. Maybe this is a part of the mobility of our society, I don't know.

Question: How do you see your role in discipline -- you've implied that it's largely left to you?

I think perhaps again this goes back to my background more or less. Let's take my son for example, who's five years old. My wife can discipline him -- let's say by taking away the rewards such as allowing him to go outside and play, allowing him to have a treat, this sort of thing. I can do the same thing, but when he does something that's quite crucial in which we wish to apply a little -- oh, I don't know if, I guess it's physical discipline -- if you want to use the good old fashioned spanking or such. I find that this becomes my role more because I think I'd rather have him associate this with me than with her. This is the way that I was brought up. I can't ever remember my mother giving me a spanking with a stick like my father. I think this is just part of the role the male plays.

Question: What if something happened during the day that deserved this type of punishment? Would she leave it for you?

Well, I think here it depends on the situation. Right now we have the problem with _____ [boy, age 5] going over into the barnyard behind here and playing. A week ago he went over there and his mother happened to be home at the time. And so, she corrected him, took him out of the barnyard, cleaned him up, and, as I recall, put him to bed or something for a half hour or whatever it was. But then she did say that when your father comes home he'll discuss it with you, and of course _____ [boy, age 5] realizes now that this discussing usually means that if it's been a severe case he'll end up getting a spanking.

Of course, he's different. All children are different and we treat them as individuals more or less. My middle child is the type that you don't have to spank, you just have to correct. The older girl, of course, she's getting old enough now that she doesn't really get into these troubles any more. Anyway, with _____ [boy, age 5] he's trying to be like his brother who is seven and his brother's friends, and he gets very belligerent sometimes, and we find that by having me talk to him after supper -- and if he needs to be spanked, spank him -- seems to have more of an effect on him than if she would just spank him at the time. However, she does occasionally spank him. But I've found that with _____ [boy, age 5] for example that if he knows in advance that if he goes in the barnyard he is going to get a spanking, he is less apt to go in there. Because he doesn't like spankings. But on the other hand he told his mother for example, "I'm not ever going to

cry again when my father spansks me," and it isn't as if I beat the child. I probably only give him two or three spankings a month -- if that's an average at all -- so I've had to spank him with a stick, then give him a good hard one to start out with so he knows what it feels like, then the rest of them can be a little bit easier, you know.

Question: Who do you think is the most permissive, you or your wife?

Of course, I'd say that she is. I'm sure she would say that I am. I think it depends on the situation. I think I'm more strict as far as wanting them to do things -- I go along with this idea to let them be themselves and to create for themselves and this sort of thing, but at the same time I also want to see that they grow up and have some understanding of responsibility and values such as picking up your clothes and bringing in your toys from outside, and this sort of thing, and I think again this is more my nature because this is what I did as a boy. I think I revert back to this quite a few times as a parent. It isn't that my wife doesn't want them to pick up their things and that, but maybe I look too critically to see that they are always doing it -- maybe this is what I do.

Yes, I think there are areas she's stricter than I am. I think she's more strict to send them to bed at night. She's more strict I think as far as having them always get up with a good smile in the morning, this sort of thing, as mothers would be that would have to see them in the morning. I think she's more strict in the sense of having a responsibility toward schoolwork for them, where I think I would rather have my boys for example be outside playing baseball and this sort of thing, associating with other kids, and she would rather have them in reading. Of course, I believe that she's right because I myself believe that to be a good reader is the best asset a child can have growing up, but yet I just kind of like to have them be boys, because I remember from my days as a boy and this sort of thing.

Question: Does age or sex of the child influence discipline?

Yes, I think this is very true. I think your firstborn is disciplined more -- you expect more from the first one. Ours happened to be a girl and I can recall all the way back that I'm more apt to correct her and have been all along for things that I do not for the other two. I find, too, that because she is a girl I expect more from her such as taking care of the children which she doesn't really do an awful lot of because she hasn't quite reached that age yet of responsibility. But we have, I think myself especially, expected more from her. I discipline her more; I correct her more; and I realize that this is a fault of mine, but it just seems like I expect her to be perfect where the next one, _____ [boy, age 7] who is three years younger almost, he is the kind of boy that really doesn't get in trouble. And he never has, ever since he was a little boy. Now maybe, I've often wondered this -- if there's something to the fact that when _____ [girl, age 10] was _____'s [boy, age 7] age my wife was working, and when _____ [boy, age 7] was growing up through that age of one, two, and three, she was not working; but then our third child, _____ [boy, age 5], was about 19 months younger than _____ [boy, age 7] so we've often said that we don't even

remember him as a baby because _____ [boy, age 5] came along and she had quite a tough time having _____ [boy, age 5] and had to have a Caesarian, and so _____ [boy, age 7] was just kind of -- not really left on his own -- but he just wasn't the type that got in trouble. _____ [boy, age 5], the youngest one, he's just different completely. They're just individuals, there's no getting around it.

Question: Do you think they're raised more by your philosophy or hers, or is there much difference?

This is kind of a hard one to answer. I think we have different philosophies -- we came from different backgrounds. I think I'm probably more dominant in these respects than she is. Again I suppose this is my male ego -- being the supreme being in the family and this sort of thing -- but I think indirectly she probably has more influence with the children than I have.

Question: Where did you get most of your ideas on how children should be raised?

I think from my background mainly. Of course, there's no doubt that going to school and becoming more educated has an influence -- you read more, you're aware of more things. I think, too, one of the factors is that my parents were from the middle class -- blue-collar workers. My dad was the first born in this country; grandfather was an immigrant, this sort of thing. Where now I am, and my wife too, we are escaping from this bracket and going to a higher level. I don't know if it's prestige factor or economics or what, and I think your values then change quite a bit. I find that my values over ten years have changed a lot, but many of the things in my background I still utilize as far as discipline, this sort of thing. I think also, I have changed quite a bit of them. My father had the philosophy that the woodshed could correct many of illnesses, like many people did in the 30's.

Question: Have you done much reading on child rearing?

No, I don't think so. Occasionally I have read a book like Dr. Spock's book, something like that. My wife is quite a reader where I'm not; I would say that she has read quite a few books. I think a lot of it has come indirectly through psychology classes and this sort of thing.

Question: What do you do when you're with your children?

I think the majority of the time I play, if we could use that word, with the kids. If I'm outside, now, for example, in baseball weather, we have new baseball mits and we play catch and this sort of thing. Again I like to play with them, I suppose, as long as my interest is keen and their interest is keen, and the boys being five and seven they soon lose interest in what they're doing and they're off doing something else. We do quite a bit involved in the line of sports. We do quite a bit in recreation of all kinds that they like. Of course, I don't know if it's really what they like or if it's what their father likes. I've found that my interests seem to be their interests in many

cases. As much as I try not to force them, you can't help but not when you associate with them so much. I play with my daughter -- now she's at a different age level and this year for example, she is more interested in associating with friends than she is really with her father or her mother after school. She's more interested in hop scotch and jump rope, like girls should be, I suppose, at this age. But she again will, if the interest is right, do things that we all want to do.

Question: When she was younger, the age your sons are now, did you play with her like you do with them?

Yes. And of course, she's three years older than the next one and therefore when she was young -- about the age 3 or 4 -- before _____ [boy, age 7] was ready to do things, she associated more directly with me as far as going places. I used to take her to the basketball games, the wrestling tournaments in high school, this sort of thing, and really in the role more of a male than a female. I don't know if this is a characteristic trait of what fathers do to older daughters or not. Then as she progressed through school we pretty well associated, but I think the majority of the roles were more in the physical sense such as playing ball together, this sort of thing. And more, of course, as the boys came along. Her interests have changed now; she's more -- I suppose this comes about the age 8 or 9 somewhere -- she has begun to associate more with feminine characteristics. She still likes to do things with us. Like Friday we all went out and played golf. She thought that was a big deal. But it does put her in competition with the male part of the family. She feels she has to compete with them in catching and hitting the ball, this sort of thing.

Question: It sounds like you and your wife divide up the daily care of the children according to who is home. When you're both home, who takes care of them -- feeding, getting up in the night, getting them ready for bed?

We've had sort of an unwritten rule in our family that my wife did all the nighttime feeding because I'm just not one that likes to get up. So I think as far as this -- from 10 o'clock at night to 6 o'clock in the morning, the role was hers when the kids were younger. Even today, when the children are very, very ill at night, such as when they have the flu, they always call for their mother. The mother is the one that responds 99 per cent of the time. However, during the daytime I think I probably did a fair share -- by that let's say a third of the time feeding the kids. I very often not only feed them but help them get dressed, give them a bath, this sort of thing. So I think in the daytime hours that I'm more active than many fathers that I know of.

Question: Who makes decisions on the child's welfare such as which doctor they go to, if they need to go to the doctor, which babysitter?

I would say that my wife does. I would say that in this role she pretty well defines who the babysitter is, like now in the daytime -- even at night. Of course, we have the advantage that we usually have college girls that she has in class most of the time. But she does pretty much of this. The doctor -- I would guess that she does, although

we've always had a personal friend who has been our physician, but I guess she really chose him in the first place.

Question: Would she be the one to take them when they needed to go?

Well, I would say most of the time, yes. However, I have found myself taking them. But again, it's a matter of convenience for us, more than anything else. But again -- I take that back. It varies on the situation. I think she takes them down for things like the flu and colds, this sort of thing -- the real crucial things, and we've only had one real example of that, I've taken care of. We were up on the mountain and _____ [boy, age 7] got hit in the eye with a rock. It started bleeding and of course I carried him and ran all the way down the mountain and brought him in, and she stayed with the other kids -- we had some friends up in the canyon. So in this situation I found myself being down there [at the doctor's.]. And of course it didn't really go too good because as he was sewing him up, the doctor said, "How are you feeling," and the next thing I knew I'd fainted and was lying on the floor.

Question: Now that you both have responsibilities outside the home, who would be the one to stay home with a sick child?

I guess, well, I think my wife would, because we really associate her role as being the first responsibility with the home. However, again, in the situation I'm in, say this year, I can get another friend of mine to cover my classes much easier than she can, so I could stay home. It depends, you see. I don't have any classes on Monday and Wednesday, and she doesn't have any on Tuesday or Thursday except one, so we can kind of work this around. But I do think -- of course I place the responsibility and my wife does too, that the family comes first. And never have we ever let a job really interfere with anything that we should do. I can always get more employment, but you can't always get more children. This is the way that we look at it.

Question: Who takes the lead in teaching moral values to your children?

I would guess -- I don't know -- if it's 50-50 or not. I think it varies. I think it has to do with religious background quite a bit. Of course, we sort of believe that children, as they perceive the world, will establish their values in accord and we try to set a good example of rights and wrongs, within reason. We don't try to paint everything rosy red. For example, we both smoke. No one else does. And this was a problem of establishing whether it is a moral value or not. Because where we come from in a state back east, it's an accepted thing that you can smoke or not smoke, it just doesn't make any difference. The same thing with religion. The majority of our friends come from other types of groups other than from Catholicism -- Protestants or Jewish people. Here we found that they seem to differentiate between two categories: you either "are" or you "aren't." And this was very hard for our kids to accept. And I think being Catholics it's doubly true because we found last year for example _____ [girl, age 10] coming home with all kinds of wild tales of things that the Catholics had done to Joseph Smith. I think probably my wife does more of the explaining to

_____ [girl, age 10], and I think I may do more with _____ [boy, age 5] and _____ [boy, age 7]. We're not trying intentionally to separate the two; I think our moral values are pretty much the same in the values that we hold for different things.

Question: If a problem of honesty, for example, should come up with one of the children, who would handle this?

We try to stress that to be honest is best, even though sometimes it may put you in a funny situation. I realize, of course, that a boy will be more inclined to steal things than a girl will when they're growing up because I just know from my background that you do have -- well, I remember sneaking some bubble gum at the grocery store, this sort of thing. Well, I just happened to have an opportunity last week to talk to Superintendent Pratt who is the head of the Industrial School in Ogden and they had a big study done by the U. S. Commission and they found that 90 per cent of the people that responded to the survey -- and these were well-known people in the United States -- had at one time or another done something that in the right circumstances would have ended them up in the reformatory. We try to stress the fact that it's right or wrong. We try to get them to understand why they should do things right -- why they shouldn't do wrong. But it's kind of hard to keep an eye on them all the time. I think another big factor -- we've found this especially true since we've been here -- that our children associate with other children who do not hold the same values that we hold. And living in the Triads we've found this extremely trying sometimes because the little boy next door swears -- he can cuss and this sort of thing and his mother or father may not correct him or see anything wrong, where we sort of stress the idea that swearing is not permissible. Again there's probably no explanation other than a religious grounding for it -- why one doesn't swear or does, this sort of thing.

Question: Who teaches your children to say their prayers?

I think my wife. She's by far the most religious; she has a background of religion more strongly than I do. Of course, again, I think there's a difference between Catholicism and Protestantism. They were much more regimented when she grew up as far as you do this, this, this, and this, and don't question it. I think this has a lot to do with it -- the background that one establishes.

Question: Who helps with homework?

Well, _____ [boy, age 7] is in the first grade. He just brings home smiles on his papers. Again here, I think the responsibility is divided according to who understands what. My wife, of course, is very gifted in the humanities in most cases. I myself am more of a practitioner of mathematics, so in most cases, I find myself helping _____ [girl, age 10] with the math and _____ [wife] helps with the English and things of this sort.

Question: Is there a difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection you show your children or in the manner in which you express it?

Yes, I think there's a difference. I think being a woman you show more affection, through physical means, and also through things you say to the children, this sort of thing. I know she's more eager to pay them compliments, do this sort of thing. Where I find myself, I think many times, it's not that I don't show affection, but in a different way. I'm more apt to just pat them on the top of the head, you know, and say "Very nice, appreciate the good work," etc. I think there's a difference between the two.

Question: Are you satisfied with the way you're dividing up the responsibility of raising the children?

I think, in the most part, yes. Again I think going to school, having many other things to do besides the home, this makes a difference. But I think all in all we divide things fairly evenly, however; I'm sure my wife sometimes thinks we're not dividing things 50-50 and I'm sure I feel this sometimes. I like to keep the 51 per cent on the male side, you know.

Question: When you're through with school, do you expect there to be much difference? If so, in what way?

I would say that we'd probably change quite a bit in little ways. I think we'll be more solvent and have more money, and money will bring to us some of the things we'd like our children to do, such as having piano lessons, going to ballet school, this sort of thing, and participating more in religious things. _____ [girl, age 10] attended a Catholic school before she came here. Whether we'll send her back to one or not again is more where we live, the type of school that it is, this sort of thing -- we wouldn't send her just on a religious basis only.

I think, too -- before we came here we had a home that had four bedrooms in it with a study and a living room as large as the entire unit we're living in now -- we find that this has been quite a change and has probably influenced indirectly more than anything else, the living conditions. We've looked for homes to move to that we could afford, and of course in the Hillcrest district there just aren't homes that one can afford. We felt that we could sacrifice a little space and keep _____ [girl, age 10] in school at Hillcrest for two consecutive years rather than changing because we knew that at the end of this year we'd be moving and she'd have to enter a new school. When she started school, she went to a public school for kindergarten, and then transferred into Catholic school for two years, and two years here.

See, this is something entirely new to us, because in our background, I went to the same grade school right straight through; I had all these friends and they all went through junior high, high school, this sort of thing. My wife the same thing. And yet we have moved -- well at one time we counted up seven times in six years. This was before; just when we were married. You know how you move so often then. We feel this is a problem to our children because you just do not, as a child, establish good, long-time friends if you are not around.

Question: Do you think there will be much difference in the division of responsibility after you're out of school?

Well, after going through school, you know how broke you get. We would prefer that next year my wife does not work. This would be our first choice. However, again if we move to a place that necessitates buying a home there will be no recourse but that she will have to work. And again, she always says, if she works another year after we're finished we can buy new furniture, this sort of thing -- practical things that a woman would do.

Question: Who has the real authority in the family?

Well, I think that in our society today women as a whole are striving for equality and I think that they would like to assume much of the role that the male has had in the past, such as things like determining where the children should go to school, what type of discipline you use, this sort of thing. I think that in our case that unless it is really a conflict with my wife's moral values and judgment, I feel that what I wish will be done. If there's any differentiation between anything, my decision will abide unless there is some logical reason why it shouldn't. Of course, I admit that she is probably smarter than I am, yet I suppose I feel that I can say that my daughter can or cannot go to the show, and if I make this decision, she will not overrule me. And I don't believe that if she made the decision, that I would overrule her because I realize what this would do the child.

Question: Then, for you, the father is the head of the home, though the wife does much of the actual taking care of the children?

This is the image that I want my boys to grow up with -- my daughter, too. Again I think it falls back on my background. I think my mother did control the family in many ways, but my father always stood for an image because when he said something, I knew immediately that I either could or couldn't; when my mother said it, I thought I could argue and talk and get her to change her mind. I don't know if this is a trait with women or not, but this has been my association. I also realize that in families that do not have a male in the family such as in divorce cases for instance, that the children do not really have quite the same role unless the mother can assume some of those things the father had, and this really becomes a task for some of them. I observe things in the ghettos, this sort of thing, where there is no father, and the child really doesn't recognize that he does have a responsibility to society and not just to himself. I'd be more in favor of having my boys grow up with this image -- not dictatorial or authoritarian or anything like this -- but to realize that the male does have a responsibility. There are some of the things of the past that are of value today that shouldn't be thrown away.

I don't want this to sound like I criticize religion or anything like this, because I really respect people for pursuing whatever they choose, but I think in this society, Mormonism, if we can refer to it as such, that the lack of participation in the family by the father is more dominant. I think this is mainly because of the MIA association and the

church things with which children always associate. I find very few fathers that are willing to go out and play with their children in the same role that I have seen fathers do elsewhere. I think the wife seems to direct more things -- things are built more on religion and this sort of thing than they are where I was from. I think this is probably true in our living area in many cases because the people -- males -- get all bound up in reaching for the dollar and the family becomes of secondary importance. I think this is one of the reasons why they don't want more responsibility -- they're content to say, "Okay, I'll bring the dollar home and you do this." But I'm not quite the same way -- many ways I might be; I'm not trying to set myself up as being any real genius.

But I've often felt that my responsibility must lie to my children and I try to do the things that I think at that time are right, even so far as it might jeopardize my future, my job. I just don't know, if it isn't your responsibility to rear them in the best way you can, I don't know why the heck you have them in the first place.

I just can't see parents who just let the children be as permissive as they can, and this is the trend of our society in many ways. If you didn't have any values growing up, I can see where maybe this may be the case, but they must have some place in society, they must have some responsibility to society as a whole, not just to themselves.

I think the literature today slants things. I think the image of the modern father who has given up his role as head of the home is an image that has been built, and I think this image changed someplace in the 50's when everything else started to change -- education started to change then; society structure changed.

I just know that if my boys do something wrong that you can better well believe that I take an interest in it and I try to correct it -- again I'm sure to my values more than to theirs. I do not think that they are capable of making decisions that are far reaching at this age of life. I don't think seriously that when they get to be 18-20 years of age that I can handle them the same way. I recall my father couldn't do the same thing on me when I got to be older.

Case 8

Personal information: Husband age 32, wife 28. Both from Canada. Married 8½ years. Husband a senior; wife has had one year of college, has taught two years. Wife now working full time. She has worked about half the years since their marriage. Children: boy 6, girl 5, girl 3. Both active in LDS Church.

Question: What do you feel a father's role should be today?

I don't think his role has changed. As far as I'm concerned, he still should be the breadwinner. Circumstances like going to college sometimes make it impossible for him to be the sole breadwinner, but he has a responsibility to supply for his family. And he has the responsibility of raising his children. I don't think it's changed a bit.

Question: How much responsibility toward raising his children do you think a father has, compared to his wife?

I think that her responsibility is greater in that she is with them more in the home when they're supposed to be home, but his responsibility is lessened none by the advances we've had technologically. He still has the responsibility of being with his family and as far as I'm concerned personally, if I've got a little time on the weekends, this is devoted to my family; because, after all, that's what we're here for, as far as I'm concerned. These people that think that the mother should do all the raising of the family and the father is to have a haphazard life now and spend all his time at the office, and when he's not at the office, spend his time at the golf course or something like this and not spend any time with his children, I think this is a false attitude, although there's a lot that do it. My personal opinion is -- and I've done it every since I've been going to the university -- is instead of my wife and I going to the show or something, to use the money that we would have spent doing that to spend the time doing something with our children, to use our car and this type of thing for recreation.

Question: In actual practice, who does the most in the rearing of your children?

Well I believe that she does, because of the fact that she's there more than I am. She's with them more time. Yet I think my influence is about as great.

Question: How much time do you spend with them?

At the present time I'm with them almost as much time as she is because she's working. But I spend a couple of hours every evening with them, and then I'm with them every morning, approximately an hour. And this is usually about all the time I spend with them during the week.

On the weekends, why I spend about three or four hours on Saturday with them -- that is devoting my attention to them. And then Sunday I'm around them the biggest part of the time.

Question: What do you usually do while you're with them?

Well, this varies. But what I like to do is what they like to do. Because I can take them downtown, and if they go downtown and I'm doing what I want to do, this is -- well, then they're wanting to go someplace else, and this is difficult. So I try and arrange it so they can do what they want to do instead of what I want to do. In other words, I want to be a companion. My boy is six years old and I'd like to have him feel he can come to me, if he wants to do something he can come and ask me and I'm not going to blow up or something because -- just because he asked me. I want to feel that I have a communication channel with him.

Question: What about your daughters; do you spend as much time with them as you do your son?

I don't think it makes a difference if they are girls or boys. I feel I spend equal time with the three children as far as that's concerned. My son is the oldest and he's out playing in the yard a lot of the time. There's a few other boys there about the same age, and he plays very well with them. They're out playing together a lot of the time. I believe actually I spend more time with the youngest daughter because she's in the house more -- she sticks around a little closer.

Question: How do you see your role in discipline, compared to your wife's?

Discipline -- we share it as far as that's concerned. I don't leave it up to my wife; she doesn't leave it up to me. If the situation arises, we discipline as necessary, and whoever is present will discipline the child. And we don't believe in not spanking them either. There's no certain area that is left to one or the other. And one thing we have done with our children is that it doesn't matter whether I feel that she's disciplined them unjustly or not. If I'm there, I'll back her up 100 per cent. We never discuss the disciplining, especially in front of the children. Because if she disciplined one of them and I was to say, "Oh, you shouldn't have done that," -- well, I feel then you've got problems.

Question: When you're both home together, who would be the most likely to discipline the children then?

I suppose I probably would.

Question: Who do you think is the most permissive, you or your wife?

I don't know, I believe I probably am -- yes, I am in all areas.

Question: Is your control over your children more direct or indirect?

We don't make any decision on who should do it or over exactly what they should be disciplined for. Maybe I come from the old book, but if a child is doing wrong, it seems like I can sense it. And I discipline them accordingly. There are things like we've got some children in the Triads that use vulgar language and I've been -- of course the kids rub up against this. We've talked to them several times about this and this is one thing we've discussed about disciplining them. But they'll never say it around me or my wife, but yet they're in that kind of a situation where you can't help it -- they're going to rub against it. But I don't believe we set patterns down and say, "We're going to discipline them for this, and this, and this." We just live life as it comes and if discipline is necessary it just seems like it shows itself.

Question: Are your children raised more by your philosophy or your wife's?

I don't believe there's too much difference in our philosophies. Although I do believe my wife has changed her philosophy a lot since we've been married, I believe to be more like mine.

Question: Where did you get most of your ideas on how children should be raised?

I believe from my folks. I believe they were masters at it as far as I'm concerned. They raised 14 of us, and I believe we're all -- as far as I'm concerned they're all good citizens and a credit to any community. So this is the feeling I have.

Question: Have you done much reading on the subject of how to raise children?

Well, my wife read Dr. Spock and some of these type books, and she says, "This is what Dr. Spock says," but I don't know -- I think my psychology is as good as that of the modern psychology professors, I don't know. I've taken a couple of psychology classes and I'm taking some more now, but I don't believe they've changed my philosophy.

I had a tremendous mother and family as far as being able to diagnose illness; and the family was large enough and there were enough younger than I was that it seems like I saw all the childhood diseases and learned to recognize them. Yet we've obtained literature and have read about these so that we'd be aware of them.

Question: How do you divide up the daily care of the children: feeding them, getting up in the night, getting them ready for bed, etc.?

Getting up in the night is the mother's job. This is my philosophy again. As far as the care, getting ready for bed, and that, if the wife's busy I go ahead and do that. If she's not, then she does it. I think we pretty well share the responsibilities around the house, especially while I'm going to school and she's working. I do more housework than I'm prone to do ordinarily. I was brought up doing very little housework,

and my father never did anything in the house. There was always my mother and three or four girls, and we were brought up doing the outside chores and they did the inside chores, and this is possibly the way we've done it. With the exception of my oldest boy. He's the oldest and he's got responsibilities that he has to do. I haven't got a farm like my father had where we can have outside chores, and a child has got to have responsibility as far as I'm concerned. So he's given his jobs that he has to do -- take the garbage out, this sort of thing.

Question: What about decisions concerning the child's welfare: doctor, babysitter, whether they need to go to the doctor?

I usually let her decide what she's going to do for a babysitter, and who she's going to get for a babysitter. As far as doctors are concerned, since we've been down here we've only used one doctor I guess. What we do is usually inquire around where we're new like this. We've inquired of people about the various doctors and usually decide together which one to go to. When we were at home, why, I knew the doctors personally, and there was two out of the five that we would go to either one of them -- they had a clinic and all five doctors worked out of the same clinic. Usually their mother is the one that takes them; she's home.

Question: Which one of you would stay home with a sick child?

I believe she'd stay home.

Question: Who takes the lead in teaching the children moral values?

I would say both of us do, and we have help from the Sunday School and the Primary. I feel that the Sunday School and the Primary are doing a marvelous job here in the USU Stake, in our ward anyway. I think they do a tremendous job, but of course we both teach them what's right and what's wrong -- we try to.

Question: Who would teach them to say their prayers?

Both of us do.

Question: Who helps them prepare talks for Sunday School?

Their mother usually helps them do that.

Question: Who will help with homework when they get in school?

I suppose when it comes to English and literature, this type of work, their mother will. When it comes to math and science, I believe I will.

Question: Is there any difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection you show or in the manner in which you express it?

I wouldn't say there is too much difference. We both show affection to them. And they're not afraid to come to us and give us a big hug. Even the boy. Sometimes when they get this old, you know, they usually

shy away from it, but he doesn't yet. He'll still come and give us a big hug before he goes to bed, and this type of thing.

Question: Will age or sex make a difference?

No, I don't think so. Possibly the affection between my son and I will grow more masculine, but I think the affection will still be there the same.

Question: Which one do the children come to if they are hurt?

It depends. I believe the boy would come to me and the girls would go to their mother.

Question: Are you satisfied with the arrangement for dividing up the responsibility of raising your children?

I'd like to see their mother home with them, and I hope that after this fall she will be. But at the present time, I think under the circumstances, it's working quite well.

Question: After you are out of school, do you expect any changes?

My wife will be home with them, and they won't have to go to a babysitter. This way she'll be closer to them, and get to know them better than she does right now. Yet when I come home I believe that their attention will be focused on me when their mother has been with them all day. Now it's focused between us both when she comes home from work and I come home from school at the same time, their attention is focused on both of us.

And I believe when she's home all the time their attention will be focused on me when I'm home. This will give her a rest. I think after having them all day she should have a rest when I come home.

But I don't think the basic areas of responsibility will change much, other than she'll do more of the daily care. Unless in my job I'll have to do some night work, then she'll have to put them in bed all the time. I don't know -- it seems like we do what comes naturally. At least this is the philosophy that we've had. My wife says she's never seen anyone that never gets upset, or that's as easy going as I am, but if the things are going to happen, they're going to happen. You can do all the preventative work that you want to do, prepare the groundwork for it so to speak, but if you're mentally adjusted so you can take the worst of it, what's the difference. You should have interviewed my wife and asked her about me.

Question: If there should be a disagreement on how they should be raised, whose way would it be done?

Well, I think it would be discussed and we would weigh the pros and cons, and I think we're both mature enough and open-minded enough that we could reach a decision. I wouldn't say that it would be her way or my way. I think it would depend on the circumstances. We've been able

to discuss all our problems as far as that's concerned. I don't believe we've had any violent disagreement, other than when I tease her -- she gets a little mad sometimes -- we haven't had any disagreements that would cause divorce or anything like this. I think we get along very well.

Question: Who has the real authority when it comes to rearing the children?

I think the responsibility is still upon the shoulders of both parents, even though she is with them the majority of the time. I don't think that because she's home that I've got a free shoe, because little girls need a father; boys need a father, especially when they get ten or twelve years old, then they need a father. And it doesn't matter how good the mother has been a boy still needs a father at this age.

And the responsibility is still mine. I don't feel that once I've got her in the home again that I'm footloose and fancy free. This is still a responsibility that has to be taken upon my shoulders as well as hers. And I feel that my responsibility will be to give her a break when I come home. Two of the children will be in school then, and she'll have one home all day. Then she'll have the others for a couple of hours possibly before I get home. By then she needs a break to get supper and this type of thing. They become my responsibility then.

Case 9

Personal information: Husband age 28, wife age 25. Husband a sophomore in social science field. He worked for several years after high school; started college two years ago. He is not employed now. Wife is from Ireland. She has been in this country seven years and is not yet a citizen. She has worked in a nursery some since marriage; now does some babysitting in their home. Children: two girls, age 4 and 2. Expecting another child in five months. Both active in Episcopal Church.

Question: What do you think the father's role should be today?

Well, in this day and age, I think it's changed. The father is more apt in the duties of the mother now than he used to be. Like when the baby is an infant, he changes diapers. I know my father never did that type of thing. The role has completely changed for the father. He has to be able to take over the mother's duties at any time. From my experience, I know, I think the child tends to go to the father more now. The father needs to show his affection more because of this close contact with the child. Actually, I think it's a good thing for both parents to have the same duties.

Question: How much responsibility do you think a father has towards raising his children?

All the responsibility in the world. That's his main responsibility. That's his first responsibility. Then his work and all comes next.

Question: Who do you think takes the most responsibility in your family at the present time?

Well, we share it, I think, pretty well. I reprimand them some of the time and she does some of the time. We don't want them to tend to draw away from one of us because of being reprimanded.

Question: How much time do you spend with them?

Oh, I'd say at least two hours a day during the week, then all weekend.

Question: What do you do when you're with them?

Keep them quiet [laughter]. No, I take them out. Like our four-year old likes to go fishing -- she's quite a fisherman now. That's why we have to have a boy next -- my wife's afraid I'm going to turn her into something I shouldn't. They like to go fishing, or hiking, or on picnics, something outside -- get them out of the house for a little while.

Question: Would you say then that when you're with them, you actually spend time with them, or are you just present in the home at the same time they are?

Oh, yes! I spend the time with them. We have little projects -- gathering wild flowers and things -- they bring them home.

Question: How do you see your role as a father compared to your wife's in discipline?

Well, when I discipline them they tend to be more -- they listen a little bit better to me than they do to my wife. Maybe that's she's around them a little bit more often or what, I don't know. We try to discipline them about equally.

Question: Do you think age or sex of the children would influence discipline?

No, I try not to be that way.

Question: Who is more permissive?

I don't know. I'd say about the same.

Question: What about the actual daily care of the children, especially when you're both home -- feeding, getting them ready for bed, getting up in the night?

Well, in the night, it's whoever wakes up gets up and takes the role there. You can't assign things like that to one or the other, although I guess some people do. We just work it out as it comes up. We just take turns on things when we're both home. I do take them for a while in the afternoon when I get home and let her rest for a while, particularly now that she's expecting. She's a little tired, and we're living up in the Triads -- we're looking for a larger place.

Question: Who chooses the doctor, or decides if the child is sick enough to go to a doctor?

Well, we both do. And we both choose the doctor on recommendation from other doctors.

Question: Who goes to the doctor with the children?

We both do. My wife doesn't drive, so I chauffeur her.

Question: What about a babysitter; who chooses them?

My wife, usually. And she makes the arrangements with them.

Question: Who takes the lead in teaching them moral values?

Well, I do, in a sense, on that. Well, it depends on what you define as morals --

Question: Well, just teaching them things in the home --

We both talk it over, and the child asks a seemingly embarrassing question, we go ahead and tell them, just right out as it is. Like the four-year-old is interested in the baby now, and so we just told her what happens and where it comes from point blank and leave the stork out of it.

Question: Which one told her?

We both have done this, several times. She's quite aware of where it's coming from, and I think it's better that way.

Question: If it is a practice in your home, who teaches the child to say prayers?

Usually my wife.

Question: If the children had to learn a short talk to say in church or something like this, who would help them learn it?

Well, I don't know because we haven't had this situation, but I imagine it would be both of us.

Question: Who would be likely to be the one to help them with homework?

I would. My wife's from Ireland and she doesn't understand. She's been over here seven years now.

Question: Do you think there's any difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection you show the children or in the manner in which you express it?

Yes. On that angle, yes. As I said, she was raised in Ireland, and raised in the old school -- you know, very strict. And so she tends to be, to my thinking, a little too strict. So I'm a little bit lenient in her eyes toward the children.

Question: Would you say, then, that you're a little more affectionate than she is, that you hold them more, hug and kiss them more than she does?

No, I don't think that. I think it's just two different ways of approaching it. But it's reaching the same goal. Usually the father plays the more strict role but in this case, with my wife's background, being raised in Ireland, I have to assume the role of scapegoat for the children.

Question: You think maybe she expects more of them than you do?

Yes. Definitely.

Question: When they're hurt, who do they come to if you and your wife are both home?

Well, it's funny. The four-year-old will always come to me and the two-year-old until lately would go to her mother, but now she comes to me too.

Question: Is there much difference between you and your wife on the philosophy of how you think children should be raised?

Oh, I don't think so to any drastic degree. There is some. I mean, I believe you can't really reason with a young child; you just have to almost show them. And she expects too much.

Question: In general, would you say they're raised more by your ideas or hers?

I think both, because to get both of them, well, it gives them a more rounded -- well, building of their attitudes. Building their character is better I think by having both ideas incorporated. We don't go by one set pattern and say this is the way you're going to raise the children, because you can't.

Question: Where did you get most of your ideas on how children should be raised?

Oh, I don't know -- through school. I'm in social work. Through school and the way I was treated when I was a child. I guess I remember some of that.

Question: If you should disagree, which way would it be done?

Oh, I don't know. It depends on who would be willing to say they were wrong. Well, I have a little more say, just because of living here in the states. You know, I know more about who's a good doctor or a bad doctor, more than she would know. She realizes this. She doesn't have her citizenship yet, and I tell her I'll deport her if I don't get my way.

Question: Are you satisfied with the way you divide up the responsibility for raising your children?

Yes.

Question: Do you think it will change much after you get out of school?

Well, I don't know. I'll probably have less time with them than I do now. Now I'm home at odd hours during the day. So then she'll do more of the daily care because she'll be there more than I am.

Question: Who has the real responsibility for raising the children; who is the "boss" so to speak?

Well, it's joint to a degree again. Just for instance, I came home and she said, _____ [daughter, age 4] did this, would you talk to her; would you reprimand her." And I said, "Well, no. It's too late now, she

won't understand why." So then we had a little friction there, but I think I'm right there, because I believe that the child should be reprimanded right at the time.

Question: Does she expect you to be the "boss," the final authority?

Yes. But to be effective in reprimanding, it has to be done at the time. Especially at this age when the child is so young. They have to learn.

Question: You've said that the father has a great responsibility in raising his children. And you pretty well divide the responsibility equally in your family, depending on who is home?

True. She never makes a decision without asking me. If she decides one of them should go see a doctor with a cold, we talk it over, decide which doctor, and both take her down. We rarely jump to anything without consulting each other.

Question: You wouldn't make decisions without talking it over with her either?

No, un-uh. She might have better insight than I do on that thing, so I don't go ahead without talking about it with her.

Question: The reason I've asked you these questions is because some of the literature implies that the modern father has given up his role as father to his wife. I'm trying to find out just how the role of father is for a few families.

I think the majority of men tend to have more responsibility than they're given credit with having. It would be great for father if we could just sit home with money coming in and play with the children. That would be fine, but the father has several roles -- making a living and being a father, and I guess this is just the pace nowadays that's pushing him farther away from the family. So you just have to fight that much harder to stay within the family circle.

Question: Do you feel that a father has less responsibility to his children than he once had?

No! He's got more! I feel that fathers are more concerned with their children now than used to be true in the 30's and 40's. I don't know of many fathers then who took much time to spend with their children, or did any of the taking care of them. Now I think they do lots more. They spend more time with them and have more concern for how they are raised. Now they're closer to their children, and it's becoming more that the children come to their fathers to talk about their problems rather than going to their mother. He has more responsibility and concern than ever before, and they [fathers] do more about it.

Case 10

Personal information: Husband age 30, wife 27; married nine years. Husband now a senior, plans to enter dental school next year. Wife has high school education. She is working full time now as a secretary and has worked for the most part since their marriage. Children: boy 6, girl 5. Wife active member of LDS Church; husband belongs to no church, but favors having his children raised in LDS Church.

Question: What do you think a father's role should be today?

Well, the role that I hope to establish in my family isn't exactly what it is today while I'm in school.

Ideally, I think the father should be the leader of the family. I think he should be the dominating force in the family as far as, well, being the breadwinner, of course, the person who is looked up to in the family, not that the wife shouldn't be, but I think this should be. Whereas now, my wife is playing the dominating role in the family as far as the economic aspect of it. I don't expect her to have to after I get out of school. I want to be the breadwinner. I want her to stay home. I want her to be with the children. They'll be older then, and I wish it could be worked out where she could be home with them now -- but it can't be. I want to be the breadwinner; I want to be the authority figure, so to speak, in the family. I think it's a good basic way for it to be, more so than it is now. My wife and I are more or less sharing responsibility now, from an economic standpoint especially.

Question: How much responsibility do you think the father has in actually raising the children?

I would think a father should take more responsibility in raising a family than one might think the average father does. When my kids bring home papers from school, for example -- I don't know the exact role for the average man in the family, but I would imagine that I take a little more interest in exactly what they're doing in school. For example, I'll go over to the school and talk to the teachers -- in part because I'm interested; in part because my wife is sometimes tied up to where she can't go and I can fit it in better with my class schedule. But I do feel that I have a definite interest here and I should have a definite interest. I shouldn't think that a youngster should always have to go to his mother for things that are supposed to be closer to him and her on their ties. I think a father should also have this relationship and knowledge of what they're doing.

Question: In your family, who takes the most responsibility now in raising the children?

It's pretty well divided. I would guess right now my wife is assuming a little more responsibility from a family standpoint than I am

because in the evening when I'm home I'm usually studying. She is doing things that are more -- in which she can communicate with the children more than I do. I try to do some when I'm home in the afternoons, but when I'm studying a lot I'm usually in the other room, except for weekends. I try and get out and do something with them then, or we'll go someplace.

Question: How much time do you spend with your children.

Oh, on weekends we usually try to do something either Saturday or Sunday. Friday nights we all go down and bowl -- they're getting old enough now where they can go down and pick up a bowling ball and lobb it down the bowling alley. And we've enjoyed going down and going swimming at this big indoor pool they've had this winter, on occasion. It's hard to set an exact time when I'm doing something specifically with them, but I would imagine, specifically for their recreation, at least three hours Saturday and Sunday. During the week it's a little hard. If I am able to give them my direct attention for one-half to three-quarters of an hour a night, other than just sitting down at the supper table with them, this is about the extent of it. They're in bed by eight o'clock usually and my studying gets started, well, depending on when I get home. Of course, I'm home more hours than this, but I'm not specifically doing things with them.

Question: What about the daily care of the children -- feeding them, putting them to bed, getting up at night?

Well, usually I put the kids to bed. I go in with them and we say our prayers and I get them in bed. If they're sick in the night, it's usually the one who hears them. My wife usually hears them before I do, I guess that's motherly instinct, I don't know, but she does get up more with them in the night when they're sick.

On preparing meals during the day, in the morning she prepares breakfast. At lunch I'm usually home from eleven o'clock till one o'clock, so I fix lunch every day. The little girl comes home from kindergarten and she eats lunch with us and goes off to a babysitter in the afternoon. The boy's in first grade and gets home about 2:30 -- he eats school lunch. But she fixes the breakfast, I fix the lunch, and we usually share fixing the supper. If we have pancakes, I'm the pancake flipper; and some things, she does. It's worked out on a pretty even keel right now at this time when she's working outside the home.

Question: Who decides which doctor and when the children need to go?

Well, we discuss it, and I probably have the final word in it. You come to a new place and you want to know about a doctor, so you usually ask people in the area what they think of one, so it becomes not so much of an intelligent decision one way or another, but asking around and finding out what's going on.

Question: Who goes with them to the doctor?

Either one of us that's available.

Question: What about choosing a babysitter?

Well, since we've been here we've had about four different babysitters; my wife I think has chosen three and I've chosen one.

Question: Do you discuss this?

Well, I would say it depends on who -- which of us comes in contact with somebody who knew of somebody. If both of us knew nothing about the babysitting situation, probably she would go and approach the babysitter and find out what she could about her. If neither of us knew anything about her, she would be the one to find out, I assume.

Question: Since you both have responsibilities outside the home, which one would stay home with a sick child?

Well, at the present time, it would be my wife. If she has to take a few days off work to take care of the children -- after all, primarily the reason she's working is to get me through school. I can't afford to miss school. If I miss school, we're defeating our whole purpose. So if the children are sick, which they have been on rare occasions, she has had to make arrangements to get off work to stay with them.

Question: Who teaches the children moral values?

Well, I think we both try to do it a lot. This Family Home Evening we've been having on Sunday nights -- I think this is an excellent training in values to the extent that they can understand it. A lot of it's a little too deep for them, but --

My wife usually presents it to us, these Family Home Evenings, and we both try and teach them the right way to do things. They know right from wrong basically, and as we go along, we both try to contribute to this. I think this Family Home Evening business that she's been teaching us has accentuated a little bit the values we want to put on this training, better than just the day-to-day process of teaching.

Question: You've said you put them to bed and say prayers with them. Who taught them to say their prayers initially? Did you?

No, I wouldn't say so. My wife taught them to say their prayers. We just go along now and I'll say a passage of a prayer and they'll follow along with me. It's a lot more fun if somebody does it with them than going in on their own. But I think I should do things like that with them. I feel close to them that way and I think I should feel that way about it. Where I think maybe it's a tendency in many homes possibly for the wife to do a thing like this, I feel close to them when I do it. I don't always do it -- there are occasions when my wife does, but I enjoy it.

Question: If they should have to learn a talk or poem to say in Sunday School, who would help them with this?

Well, now twice my boy has learned one of these short talks and we were living in _____ [town in southern Utah] at the time and his grandmother helped him with one and I taught him the other.

Question: Do you think the age or sex of the child will influence which one of you works with them in teaching them moral values?

Well, I think as things change with us, when I get into the labor force and my wife starts staying home, I think probably then she's going to have more contact with them through the day than I am. I think when I come home at night and this sort of thing that I'm going to be able to have some say, but as the trend going along from day to day she's going to have more exposure to them, more than I do. Actually now I'm closer to them and doing more with them now than I'd expect to later on because of not being home then.

Question: Who will be most likely to help them with their homework?

We don't have much of it yet. I have done some, but I'd say my wife has done more. Whenever our boy has problems with arithmetic and reading, this sort of thing, she does it principally; I'll sit down with him on occasion. He has to read so many books and I'll sit down with him and watch him read. Say after supper, she'll do the dishes and have him read to me and follow along and make sure he's doing the reading right.

Question: How do you see your role as father, compared to that of your wife, in the area of discipline?

Well, I see myself as a little stricter person than my wife is, possibly a little too strict. I get a little more respect from my children because I am a little stricter, but she has more of a motherly, easy-going way with children than I do. I don't try to be harsh with them, but I'm just a little more strict with them than she is. If something ever goes wrong where there exists a time where I feel I have to intervene, I'll take them in the bedroom and get them shaped up if I have to take a fly swatter and wack them on the back of the legs on occasion if I feel they merit it. This doesn't happen very often, but I feel there's a need for it on occasion. If it comes to drastic measures, I'm usually the one that gets the dirty job. On the whole, we share it evenly. When it comes to physical punishment, this usually gets turned over to me. She feels this is the thing that should be done, but she can't bring herself to do it.

Question: If something happened during the day of a serious nature, would she handle it, or would she leave it for you when you come home?

I'd say it would all depend on the length of time, but I'd say she's very capable of it if she had to do it.

Question: Do you think age or sex of the child would influence who disciplines?

Not now. Thinking ahead to when the children are older, I don't really know; I can't say. I just wouldn't dare stick my neck out there because I just don't know.

Question: Is your control over your children more direct or indirect?

I'd say on my part I deal with them more directly. When I lay down a -- the thing I've always tried to stress is that when they learn that you mean what you say, then you'll get more respect from them. If you tell them once --if he doesn't do it after telling him once, then you reinforce your actions, as the psychologists say, so that you don't have to stand there and yell and scream at them and this sort of thing. I don't believe in this. I think you should be able to tell a child what to do in a normal tone of voice and have him have enough respect in you or you reinforce previously what you have said enough times that it should be done without having to yell and scream and repeat yourself a dozen times. This bothers me. I hear some of the women over in our Triad -- they'll yell at a child 15 times at the top of their lungs and the child ignores them completely. And this is something that I've particularly tried to get away from. I don't know why I've tried to get away from it, but it's just something that I've got kind of a phobia about.

Question: Are your children raised more by your philosophy or hers on how they should be raised?

Well, I wouldn't say that there's a whole lot of difference. My father was very strict with me and I think I have a tendency to be quite strict with them, sometimes too strict. I can see things that I shouldn't be as strict in as I am; and I try not to be. She shows me that I am. But other than that, I don't think our philosophies are much different; they're pretty similar.

Question: Where did you get most of your ideas on how a child should be raised?

Generally, I'd say from the way I was raised. As I get older and see my kids growing up, I see them doing the same things that I did, and I see myself telling them the same things that I was told. It's just another one of those situations where when you were that age it didn't mean much to you, but now that you're in the parent position, it means quite a lot.

Question: Have you done much reading on child rearing?

No, I haven't done a lot of it. I've been exposed a little to child psychology. Everybody has Dr. Spock's book when they're young, and we used to follow a few things in there, but not direct reading generally, no. I haven't been exposed to that much.

Question: Do you think there's any difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection you show or the manner in which you express it?

Yes, I think so. I think generally she shows more physical affection toward them. She's a little closer to them, I would say, on the overall span of things. When I'm there alone during the day and I'm studying or doing this sort of thing, we get real close. My boy comes home from school and we'll go out and play a little catch, this sort of thing; we're very close. I feel good about how close I am with my kids. If I had to compare

myself with her, though, they're physically closer to her than to me I believe, if you want a comparison.

Question: Who do they come to when they're hurt?

Well, I don't really know. One of us is usually always home, and naturally they go to the one that is home. I have a hunch that my boy would come to me and my daughter would go to my wife -- if they were hurt playing or something and wanted some sympathy or something. I think that is the way it would go.

Question: Are you satisfied with the arrangement for dividing up the responsibility of raising your children?

Well, the only thing I don't like about it -- well, for the existing conditions I think we're doing about as well as can be done. I don't like the fact that my wife has to work so the kids have to be by themselves or with a babysitter in the afternoon. I don't think another person should have to raise them. I don't know how much harm it's doing, if any. I do feel that I'd like her home with them all the time and she didn't have to work. This would be the ideal situation. It can't be, but I wish it were.

Question: Do you expect much change after you're out of school?

Well, I still have dental school after this year. Of course, I expect her to stay home and take care of them. I don't know what problems this will present. They're going to be getting older. They're only eight or ten years away from being teenagers; of course that's a constant problem that everybody talks about. No, I guess they're not that far from their teens. I hope by then -- of course it's going to take me four more years to get through -- I don't know. I hope things will work out all right. I think her being home and me being on the job is the way it should be. I can't predict how things will change as far as roles go.

Question: When she's home with the children, does she go ahead and take the responsibility herself, or is this something you delegate to her? Who has the real authority when it comes to raising the children?

I think we're pretty well sharing that responsibility. If I'm not there and she is, she takes the responsibility -- she takes it well. It isn't left up to me. Or if I'm there, I don't leave it up to her. We usually share the responsibility pretty well, I'd say. Later I don't expect to as much because she'll be around them more. But for the present time I'd say it's pretty even.

I plan on staying concerned about it, and I plan on having a voice, but I don't expect to be as closely associated with them in daily contact as I am now. I think I should have a say -- I think I should be concerned because this is my responsibility.

Question: If there should be a major disagreement over some point of how the children are raised, whose way would it be done?

Well, that's a little hard to say. I don't know exactly. If I

think I'm right I usually enforce it to the extent that I get some satisfaction one way or another. I don't know -- it's hard to say. I don't know how big of a thing you're talking about.

Question: Well, for example, say one of the children did something you felt they should be disciplined for, but she didn't think it was wrong. Would she discipline them or not, since she would be the one home to do it?

Yes. Yes, she would. If I felt strongly enough that it had to be done, that there had to be some action taken, even if she was against it in a sense, if I felt strongly enough about it and felt I had considered both sides of it, I'd go ahead and see it was done.

Case 11

Personal information: Husband age 30, wife 26; married six years. Husband in first year towards doctor's degree in science. He has worked part of the years since marriage and attended school part. Now has an assistantship. Wife has bachelor's degree in a science field. She is now working part-time on campus in a lab and has worked occasionally since their marriage. Children: girl 5, boy 1½. Both active in the Presbyterian Church.

Question: What do you feel a father's role should be today?

Well, I don't know. I don't suppose my opinion would be much different than anyone else's. As a student, I think the role of father is one that is rather deferred from his normal expected roles. As a student, it's rather hard to say, because I think they're different than that of a normal working man.

Question: What do you think his role should be in a normal situation?

Well, if I were a working man, I think it would be -- Well, I think the relationship with your children should be -- that's kind of an open question you've asked.

You've got to have some kind of relationship with your children, I believe. In other words, I don't think they should be excluded from the picture; they should be taken into consideration in the decision making and so forth. But I do think the children should know their place. I don't necessarily think the family should make their decisions revolving around the children unless they're very important medical decisions involving the child, this type of thing. I think they should have their place and should realize what their place is. And I think it's the job of the father, and the mother, working cooperatively in this aspect, to make them realize what their place is.

It shouldn't necessarily be a one-sided family where the father makes all the decisions, or the wife makes all the decisions, although the wife probably will have to make the decisions because the husband isn't around a lot of the time. But I do think they should cooperate with each other's ideas. They need some type of consistency.

And I think the father should have a good relationship -- be able to talk to his children and have them confide in him and this sort of thing, and I don't think they should be afraid of their father. I think they should be able to trust his judgment and not be afraid to tell him things that go wrong and so forth. Yet I do believe an occasional spanking is good. I do discipline my children in that manner. Because I think it, well -- there's no reason to it; that's the way I was brought up. But I think they should be able to confide in their father and talk with their

father and so forth.

And in matters of decision making, I think their voice should be of some importance in the decision making of the family, as much as it gives them some say in what goes on. It seems like the main reason for fathers, I guess, is that the children can't think for themselves, so to speak, and can't make mature decisions, and so it's necessary that a father makes those decisions. I think a child should be entitled to make a lot of mistakes -- quite a few mistakes -- because like anything else, starting out in life is the time to make mistakes, and by the time they get older, they should have learned from their mistakes and gained confidence in decision making and be able to carry on through life with their own decision making without having to depend on the parents. And I think the children should be in a dependency situation on the parents and should depend on the parents for decisions to a certain age, till they can gain independence for themselves. So they don't have to stay around forever.

And I think they should be able to break away from the parents at some fairly early age with responsibilities and so forth; maybe this transition could come when they get out of high school and into college.

I think it's a father's duty to spend some time with his children, teach them various things about associations and relationships and dealings with other kids. And this is the duty of the mother, too, as well as speaking for the father.

Question: How much responsibility do you think the father has, compared with the mother, in raising the children?

Well, I think the responsibility varies a little bit according to the sex of the child maybe. It seems to me the wife has a little more obligation to support the feminine qualities of the girls and the father might have more of an obligation to support the masculine qualities of the boys. But I think the mother really is given much of the responsibility since the father is not home to teach the children and that the mother should have to handle situations in that case. I think that she should handle them with her own judgment.

I think she should discipline the child at the time and not wait for the father to come home, and so forth. I think when I'm around I'll discipline them. I try to always follow the same lines as my wife does, but when I'm not there I think she should discipline them. So as far as her responsibility and what share is hers just depends on the parents having equal say overall, but in situations where the mother spends almost all day with the children, I think this is up to the mother. I don't think the father can do this.

Question: Would you say, then, that the decisions on how they should be raised are equally made, though she is with them more than you?

I would say so, yes. Theoretically you should probably have equal responsibility, but I think the responsibility gets a little skewed -- she would have more.

Question: Do you feel that you still have half the responsibility, even though you must turn a lot of it over to her because of the amount of time you spend in the home?

Yes. I don't feel that I'm giving over my responsibility to my wife.

Question: In your home, who actually takes the responsibility of rearing the children?

Well, I'd say that at the present time my wife probably has more of the responsibility. It's an unfortunate situation and I wish I could spend more time with my children and so forth. But it's just one of those things.

Question: About how much time do you spend with your children?

Well, on a weekday I might spend -- it varies -- on vacations I spend a great deal of time with them, maybe half the day or so, or more than that, during vacations. But it seems like during school I really don't spend too much time with them. I feel lucky if I can spend an hour a day with them. And on weekends, I might be lucky if I can spend a couple of hours each day with each of them. During vacations -- quarter breaks and such -- I spend a great deal of time with them.

Question: What do you usually do when you are with them?

Oh, when I'm with my children we play around the house usually. Oh, it depends; we do a lot of -- besides playing it depends on who I am with. Usually with my daughter we can talk or read or something of this sort together. With the boy it's usually more masculine tactics -- playing around and stuff.

Question: Would you say this hour a day that you spend you are actually with them, rather than just present in the home with them?

I'm home more than an hour a day. I was thinking in terms of playing with them when I said that. Sometimes it varies; some days I might not have any time.

Question: How do you divide up the daily care of the children -- feeding, getting up in the night?

Well, we don't have to get up in the night with them. Usually I find that between my wife and myself, I usually put them to bed as much as she does. I'll put them to bed. My wife usually feeds them. Oh, at the table I help the girl butter her bread and things, so I do help in that respect. Occasionally I help feed the boy, but usually he sits next to his mother and she takes care of feeding him.

Question: When they were younger and someone had to get up in the night with them, who did it?

My wife did; I never did. I'll have to admit that I shirked my responsibility there. My wife usually gets up.

Question: Do you think this should be partly your responsibility?

My responsibility? I don't know if it should or not. I tend to -- it must not be because in my opinion it is my wife's responsibility. Maybe I've been lazy. But I've noticed that when it comes to changing diapers, dirty jobs, she's the one that gets stuck with it. But I do occasionally, if she's busy or something, do that. If there's any opportunity for me at all not to do it, I don't. Maybe I should do that -- that's another story. Some men feel obligated to do that -- I don't.

Question: When it comes to discipline, how do you see your role here?

Well, I don't know; that's a good question.

Question: Well, you've pretty well said before that you divide this up -- whoever is there at the time does it. Is this right?

Well, some things I think my wife feels that it's her responsibility to discipline them for. I try to -- well, when I'm there -- well, I really can't explain that question. We kind of both tend to discipline them equally. I don't really think it's divided up; maybe it depends on who's there. But some situations I think should be handled differently. But as far as who does the handling -- I tend to be somewhat militaristic in my discipline.

Question: Would you say you're stricter than she is with them?

Well, no, I can't say that. In some ways she's as strict with them as I am, as hard on them as I am, so I don't think I'm any stricter than she is. I think we're both fairly strict parents. In fact, I'm quite certain.

Question: Do you both do the spanking, or does this get left to you?

No, this is shared equally. We haven't spanked _____ [son, age 1½] much. He's too young to understand yet. And _____ [daughter, age 5] we're both trying to make an effort to do a little less spanking with her. We're trying to turn to sending her to her room and things of this sort, now that she's a little bit older. And it seems to have as good an effect I think. But we do spank when we feel it's necessary.

Question: Are your children raised more by your philosophy or hers?

Oh, I guess I'm raising my children according to my wife's philosophy. I think mine is influenced by hers.

Question: Where did you get your ideas on child rearing?

Probably from my parents. And of course, I guess you have ideas with your oldest about how to raise your children. But I think really when I look at myself I see myself quite a bit like my father.

Question: Have you done much reading on the subject?

No, I haven't. My wife hasn't really done too much, but she has read some about child discipline.

Question: When it comes to deciding on a doctor, or if the child is sick enough to go to the doctor, who makes this decision?

Well, I think we both make it. There are times I've made the decision about the doctor and times she's made the decision. We both kind of come to a mutual agreement on it -- we don't have much trouble.

Question: Who takes them to the doctor when they have to go?

Well, usually she does because I'm in school. But I go down occasionally if she needs help. Mainly, I'd say she takes them.

Question: How about choosing a babysitter?

Well, again, my wife takes the responsibility of finding the babysitter, usually, but I found the last one. It seems like she's usually looking for a babysitter, calling and so forth, because she has time to do that. I don't know. We just both kind of do it together. Yes, we talk about it. We know what we like and what we don't like and don't have any trouble deciding if we don't like a babysitter. Usually my wife's the first one to make a statement about the babysitter.

Generally speaking, I criticize babysitters about as much as she does. I don't know who initiates the thing. I suppose if it really came right down to really initiating the thing, she might be the one to do that. Well, she'll express -- I think she's been more receptive to the children's needs and so forth and I think if there is anything that really goes wrong she senses the problem before I do. And I usually agree with her. Although sometimes I have made voluntary statements if I didn't like a babysitter. It's 50-50.

Question: If you both have obligations outside the home at the same time, and one of your children was sick, who would be the one to stay home with the child?

My wife would. We feel that our purpose in being here is for me to go to school. She would stay home if the child was sick. I don't think there's any question about that.

Question: Who takes the lead in teaching the child moral values?

We both do that. I talk to our daughter about what's right and wrong. We talk to her when she's done something wrong or something of this sort that would bring up the question, and my wife has sat down and talked to her and so I think we have pretty much agreed on that and we have an understanding there. I spend quite a bit of time talking on that.

We don't believe in hiding anything from our children, along these

lines. If they want to know things, we tell them. We don't try to hide or get around things.

Question: If it's a custom in your family for the children to say prayers, who teaches them this?

Well, let's see. They say them. I guess I say prayers with my daughter as many times as my wife has. Equalitarian.

Question: Who do you think will help them with their homework?

Well, I suppose -- I just can't answer that. I don't know. By then I'll have time to help them, probably. I don't think I'll be helping too much with the math or anything, because I -- I'll probably help with what I'm good at and the wife will help with what she's good at. That's probably the way it will be.

Question: Do you think there's much difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection you show your children, or in the way you express it?

Yes, I do. I think she shows them probably ten times as much as I do. I really don't think I show them too much affection.

Question: Would the age or sex of your child make a difference?

Yes, I think maybe a little bit. I'd probably tend toward the boys. I tend to sympathize more with him, usually quite a bit more. Seems like my wife tends to sympathize with the daughter a little bit more. I think I tend to play with the boy more than I do with the girl. He's littler and I guess just cuter. Not really, maybe in a different way. I think I do right now kind of tend to -- it depends on the situation.

Question: Who do the children come to when they're hurt?

Usually I think their mother. Yeah, they do; I think they do. If I'm around, I'll do, if I'm by myself.

Question: Are you pretty well satisfied with your arrangements for dividing up the responsibility?

Well, I am, but I don't think my wife is. She doesn't think I do enough. So I don't think she is; but I am. Well, I wish I could take more responsibility myself, especially in this school situation. It doesn't seem like there's really -- having to study and so forth -- a lot of time to spend with them. I feel like I should spend more, but I'm too old.

I feel like I should be spending more time with them, I should -- but I can't; I'm not able to. I feel like it's my responsibility to spend time with them, but it's also my responsibility to do a good job here (in school). I think I probably feel like I should spend more time with them than I actually do.

Question: Do you think there will be much difference after you're out of school in the way the responsibility is divided?

Well, in a sense, because when I was teaching before, I think I had more time to spend with my children, and I spent more time with them than I do now. And I think when I get out I'll be able to spend more time with them. I'll be doing either teaching or research, that sort of thing. I'll probably teach.

Question: Do you plan for your wife to stay home then? Will she be with them more of the time?

Yes -- right. Well, she's working pretty much out of necessity. We believe the mother should be in the home, but in our situation -- we also kind of believe that it's good for her if she does get away from the children for the afternoon of work because of these apartments over here, besides making a little extra money. Anyway, we think the quarters are a little bit too crowded for the family and this type of thing. And we feel it might be well if she gets away from the children once in a while, in our situation. Although we would prefer the home-type situation. We don't exactly call those barracks a home-type situation. We think two is the limit in those places. It really is too much.

Question: If there should ever be a disagreement between you and your wife on some major point, whose way would it be done?

Well, I think probably my wife would get her way.

Question: You've said that ideally you have a 50-50 responsibility for raising the children, although your wife does more of the daily care because she's in the home more. When you're through school and she's in the home all the time, will she go ahead and raise them on her own, or consult with you, or is this a responsibility you delegate to her?

No -- well, I do give her that responsibility. She's asked me a lot of times what I think ought to be done.

Question: She doesn't just go ahead and leave you out of it?

Well, no, not really. It depends on how big a point it is. She doesn't consult me for everything. I mean, if there's something serious going wrong, she'll ask me what to do.

On the question before, about making decisions. I think she gets her way most of the times, but there have been two or three times when I have overridden her. But it's not 50-50 there; it would be more toward her side.

Question: Who's really the boss?

Well, I would say that at the present time, she would have the lead in raising the children. Well, it's hard to say. If I had to divide it as to just where it was [responsibility] as it's worked out, I think she would get more of the responsibility right now of raising them than

I have. I think that would be true. She would have more of the responsibility.

Question: How much more?

Well, it depends again. If it's decision making and mutual feeling about the thing, I think it's 50 per cent. What's done is fine. And I think we agree on how our children should be raised; we agree on our philosophy of what should be done in different situations -- we agree on those points. But I think in actual, practical application of this, I think she is in on more of it than I am. I would say 70 per cent of the actual doing of the work.

But as far as both of our ideas are concerned, I think we agree on that. I don't think there's any disagreement, except on maybe the case of discipline, where I tend not to have sympathy.

Question: There's some indication that the modern father has turned his role over to his wife. I'm just trying to find out if this is the case for a few families in this area.

Well, it probably is to a certain extent in our case. I don't know.

Question: You say that although she does the actual taking care of them, you do take part in deciding how they are raised and are concerned about it. Is this true?

Yes. I think I feel an obligation to them. I feel an obligation to see that they're raised as good children, and so forth. It's my responsibility to see that they are.

Yes, I can tell this in my own personal feelings. I feel like I should spend more time with them, like I should be doing this. I have a feeling that I'm obligated to do that, but I'm obligated to my school work too. But I feel a strong responsibility to my school work. I know that this is a kind of temporary thing; you might say I'm sacrificing them for me, that sort of thing. It's that type of situation. But I do feel a responsibility toward raising them. I feel a responsibility, too, to see that they have whatever is necessary in upbringing and so forth.

I think I'm concerned about their well-being and this type of thing and what activities they have and so forth. So I do feel an obligation to the children.

Case 12

Personal information: Husband age 36, wife 34; married 15 years. Husband a senior in education. He ran a dairy farm until about five years ago when he decided to go to college. His wife has had one quarter of college, would like to graduate. She has never worked since marriage other than helping him with farm work. Husband now employed to clean the local theater; wife and children help with this. Children: five daughters, age 13, 12, 11, 9, and 4. Entire family active in LDS Church.

Question: What do you think the role of a father should be today?

I think that the father should be responsible for income. He should be responsible for some of the main decisions after conferring with the rest of the family. Maybe he could have the last word, but he shouldn't be just a pure dictator. Some fathers still have that idea, but I don't think that it is a very content family that way. As the man around the house I think they should still maintain the final word. When you have exactly a balance, it is pretty hard to work out. I think that if the father is away that the woman should feel free to make decisions. The children are hers also, and she should discipline them while she is there. I think that the trend is to kind of take the easy way out. Maybe a lot of times, the wife will have to take the lead, so that is just an indication of who wears the pants. A lot of times it is brought on a man through his lack of interest. Or the man may work outside the home and be gone so much that maybe he hasn't got time for anything but providing for the family.

Question: Do you think that the woman should wear the pants?

Well, yes, if she is the only one there.

From what I've observed, and read, it seems like a lot of fathers today have kind of given up their role and handed it over to their wife. Some of them just don't seem to care or be concerned with raising the children, and just don't feel any responsibility. If they don't take the responsibility, somebody has to. I don't think that the wife usually would step in and take over if the husbands were willing to stay in there and do their jobs. I think they [husbands] get too involved in too many other things to have time for their children, like taking up golf. I've seen too many fathers get too concerned about success in business; two or three families I can think of, the children really suffer. I don't want to join them -- it doesn't seem like a worthwhile goal to me.

Question: How much responsibility do you think the father has in raising the children, compared with that of his wife?

Well, I really don't know how much of it should be his job. I think that the load still rests on the mother to see that the children get the right training. If the father is there part of the time, he

should take his part, too. I think that the mother still is the key as to what the family turns out to be.

Question: In your family right now, who takes the most responsibility for raising the children?

Well, my wife takes more of the responsibility of the children. She would like to share a little more of it with me, but I don't take it very well. [Laughter]

Question: Why not? Because you don't want to, or you don't have the time, or both?

Well, it's both. Actually when I was on the farm I did a lot bigger share of taking care of the children. I'd take one or two of them with me. I almost always had one or maybe more with me if I was irrigating or something like that. I'd just stick one on the tractor, or if I was going out to the cow barn, I'd just hang them by a nail or something. My part if it has shrunk since I've been going to school and working too. Although every job we have we take some of them down with us once in a while. That is one advantage of a janitor job, I guess. Usually we go in the morning. The kids generally get a chance more on the weekends to help out, or in the summer or holidays. We sneak them in to the show sometimes -- not really -- it's okay with the manager. They get to see more shows than they would otherwise. Sometimes I don't go with them -- gives me a little extra time to study. It's a good job. It's flexible, and that's the main reason I took this job. It doesn't pay much more than a dollar an hour, but I can fit it in to my time, and take the kids with me.

Question: How do you see your role in discipline?

I don't think that I take as much responsibility as I should in this respect. If we were both home, my wife would probably prod me into doing it.

Question: Are there certain situations that you would handle more so than her?

If the children get really out of hand, then I step in and put the lid on. We are fairly lenient with them in some respects, and we also have a fairly strict set of rules. If they get to stepping out of bounds a little too far or a little too often, then I'm likely to get -- act a little bit angry. Probably more disgusted than angry.

Question: What about physical punishment; is it left up to you?

It is encouraged to be left to me if I'm there. The wife pretty well handles the bawling them out, but when it comes to spanking them, she thinks that's dad's job. Sometimes it takes some extra prodding, like I say, to get me into action.

Question: Who would you say is more permissive, you or your wife?

I think I am. I'm finding out that I'm naturally too permissive with them all the way around. I'm also finding out I'm too permissive

in my student teaching. I'm going to have to find some way to put the lid on -- things are getting pretty wild.

Question: Do you think that your children are raised more by your philosophy or your wife's?

There is not too much difference. My wife's philosophy probably carries the most weight. Normally if the woman is in the home more I think that is the way it is. If there is a difference of opinion, usually we make some sort of a compromise.

Question: If there is a disagreement then, you settle it and come to a mutual agreement, or does one of you take over and have your way the majority of the time?

No, we try to reach a happy medium. Once in a while in the past I've made decisions and haven't asked for anybody else's opinion, but they kind of feel bad when they get left out.

Question: Would your wife make decisions that you don't agree with?

She hasn't. She is more likely to make sure that I okay the decisions before she makes them. This is something that I've gradually developed a little more understanding towards in the past few years. Maybe this was the way she was raised or something. She is pretty careful to make sure that I agree before she goes ahead.

Question: What do you think has had the most influence on your ideas on how children should be raised?

Well, probably just the way that we were raised -- or I was raised. And by observing how kids have turned out and knowing how they were raised.

Question: Have you done much reading on the subject?

Lately, yes, in school. I've read magazine articles before, but after taking classes on the subject, the magazine articles seem pretty dull. I've tried to get a little idea of what was the best way to go and what might upset them more psychologically. I don't think that I did quite right by the first two. Looking back now I think whoever saw us spoiling them probably thought we didn't do quite right. But they seem to be turning out pretty good. I've noticed lots of people do that. They're pretty hard on the first couple of kids, then the last couple are pretty near loved to death.

Question: How much time do you spend with your children now?

It would be hard to really say. Right now it's pretty skimpy. It depends a lot on what type of classes I take. I took a botany class where I collected plants and I took an insect class where I collected insects. With this type of classes I take my whole family with me and we all chase bugs and get everybody involved. This year I've kinda had to leave them out with too many education classes.

Question: About how many hours of the weekdays are you usually home?

I'm actually home as much as possible. I even try to do my studies at home. I've learned to study by little bits between things that are going on. It isn't a very good way to concentrate when you are working on certain types of things, I guess. I have tried to do most of my studying at home. I guess I'll have to say that I'm home just as much as possible.

Question: What about the weekends?

I'm home then except for when I'm working. I try to take my kids with me as much as possible. They have been without me around a lot more this year than the other three. And it's been a lot less than when I was farming -- then I had them with me all the time. That was one good thing I could say about farming. If I had a whole family of boys, I think I'd farm just so I could spend the time with them, in spite of how farming is.

Question: What do you usually do when you are with your children?

I end up studying a lot of the time, or reading. I'm not very good to play games with them. I talk with them about the different things that are going on -- we have different conversations. If I'm enthused about something, I try to get them enthused. If I find that they are interested in something I usually talk about it with them. But I've been kind of a poor game player with the kids. It is probably a weak spot especially for someone who is in elementary education.

Question: It doesn't sound like your studies push them aside. Are you saying that you study only when they are doing something else?

Yes. Well, maybe I'm different than some. But I get a few A's once in a while, but it doesn't bother me if I get a B or once in a while a C. Maybe if I was on a scholarship and it depended on my getting a 4-point it would be different. Maybe I'm just getting old and lazy.

I don't put my homework before talking with my children. I try to do my homework in my spare time, if I get any. And sometimes it just doesn't get done. Have you ever noticed that you take notes and don't even have time to review them before the test? A lot of my classes I've gotten real sloppy with my notes because I don't even see them again. It's just the process of writing it down -- that does fix it a little better. But some of my notes I don't ever look at again -- at least not till after the test.

Question: How do you and your wife divide up the daily care of your children, such as feeding them, getting up in the night with them, or getting them ready for bed?

Most of this is in the past for me. I hardly ever got up in the night with the first one; and the second one I got up more; and I was about the main one to get up with the third child. By the third one, I kind of got a kick out of the kids by then. My wife helped out on the farm quite a bit and was pretty tired and I just thought I would

help out that way. As I look back now, I think that I was cutting off the last one a little too much with my attention. My wife was busy and then she got sick and with another baby in the house I think that our third little girl got off to a bad start. I think that our littlest child will have the best chance for a good start because she has had the longest stretch without any competition.

Question: Do you tend to spend more time with the younger children than you do the older ones?

For me that's the way it is. I spend more time with the littlest children. Maybe if I had boys it would be different.

Well, I couldn't spend much more time with them, though. I spend about as much time as I have. I might spend my time in a different way, though. I might play more games with them.

Question: Do you think that until you came to school you pretty well helped your wife take care of the children?

Yes, I feel like I did. Yes, as far as tending the children. I don't think that I helped as far as taking care of the house. I think that I have done a pretty fair share of tending the children, and I let her go to her meetings -- she always has plenty of them. If we have two meetings to attend, we have to sit down and choose which is the most important to attend.

Question: Who is the one who chooses a doctor and decides when the children should go?

I guess my wife has lately. When we first got married we had my old family doctor and we went to him until he died. From then on my wife pretty well chose the doctor. Usually she would be the one to take them if they had to go, that is unless she couldn't, and then I would take them. She decides if she wants me to and tells me to -- I don't think about it.

Question: What about choosing a baby sitter?

Usually my wife does the choosing. We haven't had to have a baby sitter for quite a spell. My oldest three girls do a lot of baby sitting and it is a good way for them to earn their own money.

Question: Who takes the lead in teaching the children moral values?

That would probably be my wife and I would back her up, unless something happened where she wasn't around to do it, and then I would.

Question: Do you think it would make a difference if you had sons?

I might do a little more of it.

Question: Who teaches them to say their prayers and helps them with talks they have to give?

My wife would unless she doesn't have time.

Question: What about homework?

Since I'm going to be a school teacher, I profess that there is an answer to every question. So they come to me and I see what I can do to help and see how they can work it out for themselves. I guess that is about the only way you can really help them. Otherwise you would be sitting there doing it all and they won't get any good out of it.

Question: Is there a difference between you and your wife in the amount or type of affection you show your children?

I don't think there is any difference.

Question: If your child was hurt, which one would she be most likely to come to?

The one that was the closest, and if they don't get any response, they go to the other one. But it doesn't really make any difference.

Question: Are you pretty well satisfied with the way you have divided the responsibility of rearing your children?

I think I am. I feel I do the lesser share. I feel kind of the responsibility, but feel I would do about the same as we are doing. I kind of think I'd like to be like a grandparent and do all the fun part and leave the work to someone else.

Question: Do you think it will change when you get out of school and start teaching?

Well, I'm afraid that I will be almost as busy as I've ever been, so I don't know if it will change much. From what I've observed, there isn't a lot of change. The only way it would change is if my wife would go back to college, but there is always the chance that we will have one more child, and that would keep it about the same.

Question: Since your wife is home more than you are, she does most of the actual caring for the children. Does she go ahead and do this on her own, or is this something you decide on together, or is it a responsibility you feel, but delegate to her?

Usually she has done it on her own. She maybe would check with me sometimes to see if I approved.

Question: Would you say that this is her job to raise the children?

I would say that this really should be the mother's main job. I've read on some studies that have said that working mothers didn't have an effect as far as juvenile delinquency, but I still feel that they should stay home and raise the children. Some mothers may be nervous and cranky and it would be better if they worked, but if they are fairly good mothers to begin with, I think they are better off to stay home more.

Question: Who would you say is really the boss in your family when it comes to raising the children?

I suppose that if my wife wanted to take over and be the boss, I'd let her be boss. She doesn't want to bear the burden, though. I usually have the right for any final decisions. A lot of times I say, "You do what you think is best."

Case 13

Personal information: Husband age 30, wife 27; married ten years. Husband quit college at time of marriage and worked for seven and a half years before returning. Now a senior in engineering. Wife has high school education. She has never worked until this year; now working half time. Husband teaches labs and corrects papers for additional income. Children: girls age 9 and 7, boys age 6 and 4. All active in LDS Church.

Question: What do you think a father's role should be today?

I think in the day and age we live in now, a father has a much better chance to become closer to his children -- with the type of work we do and the amount of leisure time we have -- five-day a week jobs and this type of thing. I think it adds a little responsibility to the father's calling to have this extra time to spend the time usefully and to help them learn what they are so you can help them develop the abilities they do have. I think probably rather than just being somebody that you say hello to and don't dare say any more to when you see him when he comes home late at night or when he gets up early in the morning, that the children have a lot better chance to learn what their father is, too. And this adds a little more responsibility to setting the right example and working with them and playing with them, trying to accomplish your goals with them.

Question: How much responsibility do you think a father has, compared to that of his wife?

Oh, I think his responsibility is probably just as great, only it may be in a different manner. I'm not sure I really understand what you mean by responsibility, whether it's providing or teaching -- I think the father definitely has a responsibility to provide for the needs. He always has. I still think the mother has the edge on being able to have that touch to get across to the kids and be just a little closer to them than the father has. Maybe it's good that it is this way. Sometimes just a little bit of unknown there between the father and the child can bring the necessary respect that being too friendly bypasses.

Question: In your family now, who takes the most responsibility in raising the children?

Well, the last three years I'm sure it's been my wife, with schooling and everything going on. And I think she leads out pretty well. We do discuss the problems that the children have, things that we feel we should do more or less as a team to work things out for them and to help them work things out. But I think probably the mother still carries the load of the responsibility. I think it would have to be at least 60-40, and maybe just a little bit more, maybe 65-35 or something like this -- I'm not sure it would reach 70-30, however. I think it would fall in that category.

Question: How do you see your role in the area of discipline?

Well, I think when anything gets to a serious nature where some quite appropriate manner of discipline is needed -- not physical punishment or anything like this -- but a good stern talking to, I think it is the responsibility of the father to do this. I know in our particular family that my wife can talk to the girls or the boys about something and it doesn't sink in quite as much. Maybe because there's still this distance between them and their dad that there isn't between them and their mother. But I think a father can accomplish discipline a little better than a mother can because of this.

Question: Does either age or sex influence the discipline?

Yes, I think it probably does. Your type of disciplining changes quite a bit as the child grows older. They can get to a point where they can have a right good tongue lashing and come out of it feeling worse than if they would have gotten a right good hard spanking. And I think probably as they reach this point where a good tongue lashing does the job, the father's part in this thing begins to pay off a little more. I can sit my girls down if they've done something wrong and not be out of patience with them at all or anything, just sit down and have a right good talk with them and make them realize that they were wrong and it seems to have a pretty good effect. Sometimes it makes them feel pretty unhappy for a little while, but it seems to accomplish it -- they're a little more mindful of what they have done wrong. And I think -- well with our experience anyway -- I think my talking to them has had a little more effect than my wife's has. But while they're younger, I think it's probably even-steven. As to the age the breaking point comes in, I'm not sure I can define that.

Question: Who do you think is the most permissive?

Oh, I think she is.

Question: With boys and girls alike?

Oh, I think so. She's probably a little bit more patient with everybody than I am.

Question: Is your control over your children more direct or indirect?

I think we work on it on a mutual basis. I don't draw any lines, really, that I think she should follow. I respect her judgment in things and figure that if I'm not there she can pretty well take care of them, and I kind of expect her to take care of a good share of these things that come up through the day without having to relay them on to me at night, unless they're of quite a serious nature.

We've tried not to have her postpone dealing with them till I get home, saying "You just wait till Dad gets home and then you're really going to get it." We've tried to work it out so they realize either one is capable of taking charge of things and carrying out the consequences if it's necessary. I think still again there's a little bit of distance

between a father and a child that makes them want their dad not to find out what they've done wrong a lot of times; and I think it maybe destroys the image of their mother a little bit if she tells the husband of every little thing that happens. I know our youngest one has had a few problems with his toilet habits and if he happens to wet his pants during the day, he doesn't want his dad to know about it. He seems to have a little more of this fear than the rest of them have had for some reason, I don't know why. Maybe it's because he's had most of his growth and development since we've come back to school when pressures have been a little greater. Maybe dad hasn't had the patience he should have had. But it's more obvious in him than in any of the others.

Question: How much time do you usually spend with your children?

Time when I actually spend it with them, when I'm not hurrying to get breakfast over to get to school and this type of thing?

Oh, we usually get up about 6:30 and I have 7:30 classes. So there's about an hour to an hour and a half in the morning when I'm there. There's no time to work anything out with the kids at that time of day other than get them up and going and get them fed, and get things organized so my wife can go to work. I usually get home about 5:00 in the evenings and plan on spending from then until 8:00 eating and doing things with the kids -- going out and flying kites and going out in the middle of the Triads and playing a little baseball with them or something like that. And then we try to shoot for about half a day on Saturday, Saturday afternoon if we can, and maybe run up the canyon or go ice skating or sleigh riding or something. And Sunday is generally spent as a family. We go to church and we don't really plan on doing something Sunday afternoons together, but they're all there -- they're still young enough that they don't wander very far so we are pretty much together throughout Sunday.

Question: Do you spend time equally with both boys and girls?

Yes -- yes, I think it's pretty evenly balanced. The girls are still doing boys' things. Of course, we don't do too many girls' things. We never get involved in playing dolls or anything like that -- but we do try to keep the activities -- especially since we've been back to school -- we've tried to do activities where we could do it as a group rather than singly. We try to spend some of the time each day just specifically being with the children aside from the time spent in the home at the same time they're there. Most days we approach it from this standpoint.

Question: How do you divide up the daily care of the children?

Well, the youngest is about the only one who can't take care of things himself and he's reaching the point now where he can. We do have the problem of beds and dishes and getting breakfast ready and things like this, and my wife has to be to work at 8:00, so we run a pretty tight schedule there. I usually worry about straightening up the kids bedroom. Their bunks are hard for the kids to make -- we've got them stacked in and hung from the ceiling. I usually worry about that aspect of it and see that _____ [son, age 4] gets taken care of; my wife takes care of

getting breakfast ready and the girls' hair combed and things like this.

Question: When they were younger and needed more care, who took care of feeding them and getting up in the night, etc.?

Oh, I think my wife probably carried the ball there, before we came to school. As I said I worked for seven and a half years at Arco, and so I had to be gone before the kids were up. And in the evenings we tried to get them ready for bed together, on a shared basis I guess you might say. We usually took a couple and saw that they got ready as they should. I think my wife probably carried the majority of the getting up in the night too.

Question: Who chooses a doctor and decides if they need to go?

This is my wife's responsibility, too, as far as I'm concerned. She's around them enough to recognize when they're up to par and I'm really not, I don't think. And so I respect her judgment in this and let her go when she feels it's necessary.

Question: Is she the one who takes them to the doctor?

Not all the time. If I'm available, I sometimes take them. They always seem to get along a bit better with penicillin shots if I take them than when she does. It just depends on what conflicts we have at the time.

Question: What about choosing a babysitter?

I think this is probably her responsibility, too.

Question: Does she just go ahead and do these things without consulting you, or do you talk it over?

Oh, we usually have a little discussion on it if we're going somewhere, which we haven't done much of the last three years. She usually asks me who I'd like to have come babysit. If I think there's been one babysitter I think the kids have enjoyed a little more than others, I'll suggest her. I'm sure she asks me just for the respect of asking me -- to make me feel a part of things. I think she pretty well knows what I'll say. But even if she didn't ask me, I'd go along with what she did.

Question: Now that she has responsibilities outside the home also, who would stay home with a sick child?

Well, here again it would depend on the demands that are coming up. If I just had normal classes to take care of that morning, I'd usually stay home and she'd go to work. If there's exams or things like this, then it has to be reversed. We feel that our goal right now is to get through with this business [school] and if we have to cut out a little bit of the money-making aspect of things, then we'll do it to accomplish this. We try to work out these things so it's best for everyone.

Question: Who takes the lead in teaching the children moral values?

Well, I think we both try to carry this. She probably has a little more chance to see that they try to do what they do. We try to hold our regular family evenings and there bring these principles into play for them and they can realize the importance and benefits that come from practicing these.

Question: Who teaches them to say their prayers?

I think this is probably a shared effort too. I think we pretty well take them in together and have them kneel down and say their prayers while both of us are there.

Question: How about helping them with talks for Sunday School and things like this?

Well, my wife here again, gets the responsibility on excuses from a busy husband. She generally ends up writing the talks. I sometimes help them learn them.

Question: What about helping them with homework?

Well, they really haven't gotten to a point where this is a problem yet. In the future, with the new methods of teaching and such, maybe neither one of us will be able to help them [laughed]. I imagine the responsibility in math and science and these things will fall a little more in my line where English and spelling and things like this might fall in hers. I would just picture that this is the way it will probably work out where both of us would try to lend a hand where we could. Unfortunately our children are going to reach that age before long and we're going to find out.

Question: Is there a difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection you show your children or the way in which you express it?

Yes, I think she's probably a little freer in her expressions of affection than I am. I think this is probably indicated by who they run to when they get hurt. Maybe it's because she's around them more and has this communication to a higher degree than I do, but I think women in general tend to be a little more sympathetic with little hurts, cuts, and things like this than a father does. A father sometimes passes them off, saying, "Oh, that didn't hurt -- you're a big boy or a big girl -- you shouldn't be crying like this."

Question: Would age or sex make a difference here?

I don't think it would change the amount that a person shows for them. I think it would definitely change the methods you use to show this affection. While they're young you get them on your lap and jostle them around a little bit. I guess we'll have to develop other methods when they get a little older. The oldest girl is getting to a point where -- she still gets a kick out of every now and then, but it's not something she wants to do all the time, like the littler ones do.

Question: Do you think your children are raised more by your philosophy or your wife's?

We've been married long enough now that there isn't much difference. I think we pretty well meet in the middle on things. We have the fortunate marriage that we think a little bit alike; we kind of have the same likes and dislikes. This has probably developed a little through our almost ten years of marriage -- I guess it is ten years now. But we were raised in the same community and had the same type background and this type thing, so I think we pretty well think alike.

Question: What had the most influence on your ideas on how children should be raised?

I think the church definitely has a big part to play in this -- what we stand for and what we want our children to stand for. I think the way we were raised has a big effect in things. I think we all tend to raise our children the way we were raised a little bit. All of us, I'm sure, got various ideas that we don't feel are as good as others that we were subject to while we were growing up, but I think this still has a real dominant effect on the things you do and how you go about doing it.

Question: Have you done much reading on child rearing?

Not a whole lot. I think the only real book we've got in our library is one by Skousen on how to raise a boy. We have gone to that a few times with our boys. We read articles that we run into in popular literature -- newspapers, Reader's Digest. We look at the articles there, and ones we happen to see in other magazines. We don't always agree with them, or always try to put them to work in our family, but I think we have an active interest that we do look at things like this.

Question: Are you satisfied with your arrangements with dividing up the responsibility in your home?

I'd like to be able to spend a little more time with them, and I hope that when we finally get out and get settled in a house where I haven't got the pressures and obligations that I have now that I'll be able to spend a little more time with them. But other than this I think the relationship's been satisfactory as far as I'm concerned.

When I get out I expect to have more time with them, and maybe have better opportunity to make better use of the time where we'll have a little more financial backing to go places and see things. We're limited in what we can do now -- everybody in this situation understands that, I think.

My wife terminates employment the day I graduate. I'm from the old hard school that feels the wife should be in the home -- be there where she's needed when she's needed.

Other than her being home all the time, and hopefully I'll be able to spend more time with the children, things will stay about the same.

Question: If you and your wife should disagree on some point of child rearing, which way would it be done?

Well, I feel right at the present time if we had a real strong disagreement on something that it may end up going my way. I think my wife respects my position as father enough to, and has had enough indoctrination with the church, to let the decision go along with my opinion. Whether it's justified or not, I'm not sure. I think she's just as capable of knowing what's best as I am. But I think in any misunderstanding like that that it would probably in the end -- if I stuck to the thing I wanted -- go my way.

Question: That's what I'm trying to find out -- who really is the "boss" when it comes right down to it.

I think that in our case that I'd probably have the last say in things. Here again, maybe our Mormon background is a good share of it. We tend to lean this way more than other people do. And I really don't think a man loses his image as father when he helps around the house a little bit like some people seem to think. I don't think there's anything wrong with pitching in and doing the dishes, if your wife's busy with something else that she has to get done, or helping clean the house, or things along this line where some people turn up their nose and say, "Boy, you're on the wrong track," when you do these things. I think a person can still do this and keep their father image. I hope they can -- if that's what the father image is [to avoid these things in the line of helping around the house], I guess I'm not after it. If it means being the sole ruler and getting to do everything your little heart desires without respect for your wife's needs and wants, or your children's, then I don't want it.

I do feel a definite obligation as a father to be concerned with my children and how they're raised. I don't think we can pass it off because we're busy making a living, because I think we have much more opportunity to make a living in a lot less time than people in days gone by.

Case 14

Personal information: Husband age 27, wife slightly younger; married for seven years. Husband a sophomore in engineering, just started college last year. Wife has high school education. She has worked part time one year since their marriage. Now she stays home all the time. Children: three girls, ages 6, 5, and 8 months. Both active in LDS Church.

Question: What do you think a father's role should be in terms of today's world?

I think it should be divided equally with the mother as far as responsibility is concerned. The father and mother should both share in the raising and training of their children. The difference should be only the difference between the masculine and feminine role in the sense of the father being the wage earner and the mother being the one who takes care of the children in the home as far as their daily needs are concerned.

Question: How much responsibility does the father have for the care and training of the children, as compared to the mother?

I think they both share in the responsibility as far as the obligation to see that they are trained and cared for in the proper way. The mother has a larger responsibility in the sense of the amount of time that is spent with the children.

Question: In actual practice, who do you feel takes the most responsibility in rearing your children?

I feel that their mother does in the sense of seeing they are cared for as far as their physical needs are concerned, and discipline, at least in the minor problems that come up in daily living. But I'm responsible in the sense that things should be done so that the children are raised to be good individuals.

Question: How do you see your role in the area of discipline?

I discipline in the major situations and when real big problems are concerned. She disciplines in the minor, little everyday situations that happen. If a major problem comes up, she consults me and we reach a mutual agreement. She usually disciplines at the time the situation arises and then I back her up in this, and anything that can be delayed we discuss and arrive at a mutual agreement. When I'm home I discipline them most of the time -- in all situations, minor and major problems. The age of the children doesn't have any influence, at least as far as the older two -- the five- and six-year old. The baby is too young yet for discipline.

Question: Is your control over the children more direct or indirect?

I feel that it is direct -- that I'm in on the decisions that are made and in on the control directly.

Question: Who is more permissive?

I feel that if I were away from them more that I would be more permissive. As I spend a lot of time up at school, I tend to overlook a lot of the little things that happen between the children when I'm at home. I find that when I'm at home with them an equal amount of time to that of my wife I tend to be about the same as she is in allowing them or in disciplining them and making them do the things that I want done. So that if we spend equal amounts of time with them we are about equal in the amounts of discipline or strictness.

Question: Is there much difference between your ideas and your wife's on philosophy of child rearing?

I don't think so. I think that we are about even here. We seem to agree on the major things that should be done to train the children.

Question: What had the most influence on your ideas on how to rear your children?

I think my own background and from my observation of my own children and other children in response to various types of discipline and training. This has influenced the way that we discipline and train our children. Very little of the training that we give comes directly from books or classes or this sort of thing.

Question: How much time do you spend with your children?

I spend at least an hour every day, all of Friday and Saturday evenings, and all day Sunday. We also usually have a family evening together which would probably average out to about two in every three weeks.

Question: What do you usually do during this time with them?

We read books mostly. We play together. Sometimes we watch a TV program or two that are our favorites. We play outside when the weather is good -- in the swings, and take walks, this kind of thing we do together. I try to spend the time I'm home doing things with them.

Question: Does age or sex have any influence?

No, it does not. I play mainly with the older two children. The older children are so near the same age that I spend the time equally with them. The baby is treated like the older two were at that age.

Question: How do you divide up the daily care of the children?

My wife does the feeding of the children, unless it is necessary that she be gone from the home, which usually amounts to two evenings

a week. At this time, I feed them and take care of them at home.

Question: What about getting up in the night?

I usually get up with the older two children and my wife with the baby.

Question: What about putting them to bed?

If I'm home, I usually put them to bed. The evenings that I'm not home, of course, my wife does this.

Question: Who makes decisions concerning the child's welfare such as choosing a doctor, dentist, or a baby sitter?

We usually agree on this sort of thing together. Both of us inquire around to find out who might be a good doctor or a good dentist. We usually go to a pediatrician because my wife has to deliver the babies Caesarean section so we have a pediatrician on hand. The pediatrician that we have here in Logan we chose by just picking a name out of a book. We were impressed by the way in which he handled the children, so we have continued going to him.

Question: Who makes the arrangements?

My wife usually does this. She makes the arrangements and takes them to the doctor and the dentist.

Question: Whose responsibility is it to stay home with a sick child?

When my wife was working part time, we worked out the best arrangement as to who would go to work. The one who had the least obligation at the time stayed home with the children.

Question: Who teaches the children moral values?

I usually take the major problems and if I'm home handle the situations that arise. The things that we want our children to know, we try to discuss and to agree on these between us ahead of time.

Question: Who teaches the children to say their prayers?

This is shared equally between us as far as who helps the children with this kind of thing.

Question: Who helps them learn talks for church or school?

My wife usually does the majority of this kind of teaching.

Question: Who helps the children with homework or personal problems?

We haven't had any homework yet. We have had very few personal

problems come up in our home. My wife has handled most of these. I'm not really aware of there being much need for help in this area yet.

Question: Is there a difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection that you show your children, or the way in which you express it?

No. I think that this is pretty well equally divided between the two of us. We both try to show affection to the children.

Question: Who does the child come to when hurt?

I think that this is about even also, as far as I know. I'm not aware of there being any big difference. The children will come to one of us at one time and another at another time. There seems to be no difference as to the age of the child concerned.

Question: Is your arrangement satisfactory to you for dividing up the responsibility of raising your children?

Yes, we are satisfied with the way we have the responsibility divided at the present time. I feel that I would like to spend more time with the children if this were possible. My wife feels that she would like to do more things for them, too.

Question: When you finish school do you wish to change your present arrangements?

No, I think that everything will remain about the same as it is now.

Question: Do you feel that the real authority in your family is yours, your wife's, or delegated to her from you, referring to the area of child rearing?

This, again, is pretty well 50-50. We agree on the way that the children should be raised and we decide between us what we want done.

Question: If you disagree, who would make the final decision?

I, as the father, usually carry more weight in the decisions that are made. We usually decide on the basis of who has the most knowledge on the particular situation that has come up. If one of us knows a little more about this kind of a problem, we agree that it is that person who is allowed to make the final decision. However, I am usually the one who carries the most weight or who has the most influence on decisions that are made concerning the children, or anything else.

Note: After completing the interview, the subject questioned the interviewer about the study and about what other fathers had said. During the discussion, it was mentioned that a Catholic father had said that some of the Mormon fathers he was acquainted with don't take all the responsibility that he felt they should. The subject then replied:

I feel that this is probably true. I think that many of the fellows

I have observed around me aren't taking the responsibility for the children that they should -- they are spending too much time at school or doing other things.

I feel that one age of childhood is just as critical as another age. If you miss out on training the children when they are young, you can't take care of this problem later on. I feel that the only way that you could shirk this responsibility would be if there were some way to suspend the children in limbo or something where they didn't grow and develop -- but you can't. If you aren't there to train the children while they are young, they would go right on growing without you.

I feel that the attitudes of the parents are important because the kids pick up their attitudes from their parents. These are the ideas that they will carry with them throughout the years. So the parents have an obligation that their own feelings are the kind they want their children to have.

The father's -- both parents' -- influence has to be maintained with the children all the time. There shouldn't be any slacking -- any shirking of the responsibility -- just because you are in school or because of anything else.

Case 15

Personal information: Husband age 29, wife 25; married for six years. He is a senior in college in a science field; she has a high school education. Wife is now working full time at night and has worked on and off since marriage. Children: boy age 5, girl age 2. Not active in any church, although the wife used to be LDS.

Question: What do you think a father's role should be today?

Well, what it should be and what it is right now certainly aren't the same. A father should definitely be the head of his family. This is pretty well accepted, I think. Outside of the area of being bread-winner, I think that he should be an example to his children. He still has to administer some punishment now and then. I think that he should try to consider his wife more than probably a lot of men do. I don't really know what I mean there. I think that there are so many men who think that the woman has it real easy and she doesn't really.

Question: When it comes to raising the children, how much responsibility do you think the husband has?

Well, ideally I think that it should be around 50-50. But the husband is out of the home quite a bit during the day when the children are most active. I think that when he comes home at night that he should spend some time with them. I think that he should spend an hour with them at least each night. And then on other occasions he can spend a little more time with them.

But I think that he should keep it in the context that if he hasn't got time they shouldn't feel like they have been cheated. He should make it known that he is not doing them a great favor but that he is doing it because he likes to, when he can do it. I don't think that you should try to become too close to your children, trying to be pals with them, because you are not his pal. I feel that you are more his ideal if you're the right kind of guy. A boy really looks up to you, I know that. They don't think you can do anything wrong.

Question: In actual practice, who do you think takes the most responsibility raising your children now?

My wife works from 5 o'clock at night until they close [the bowling lines] which might be 1 or 2 o'clock in the morning. Actually, right now I'd say it is about 50-50. I come home at 4 o'clock in the afternoon and she goes to work at 5 o'clock. I get supper for the kids and feed them, clean up the dishes, give them a bath if they need it at night, and tuck them in bed. So I've been getting quite a bit of exposure to my children during these last two years at school, where later on I probably won't.

I'm home with the children practically every evening. Except I have hired a babysitter for the past couple of weeks now to relieve me and get me back over here to the computer center. I'm writing a program for the school and I have to get over here at night when the computer is a little more free.

Question: In actually taking care of them then, you say that you do about half of it?

Pretty close. Except, of course, on her days off, it switches back.

Question: When you are both home, who takes care of them?

She does mostly when we are both home. However, for instance on Sunday mornings or -- Sunday mornings is the only one you can use. It is still about a 50-50 thing because Saturday night she works awfully late and is usually pretty tired. So if I am in the right mood I get up and take care of them.

Question: Who does things like get up in the night when they wake up?

Well, mostly her, but maybe a quarter of the time I would.

Question: How do you see your role in the area of discipline?

I'm a little quicker on it than she is. I have a lot lower tolerance level. I expect too much of my children, especially my boy. I keep thinking that he is twenty years old when he does something wrong and that he shouldn't do it. In the role of discipline, I don't know. I definitely don't think that little things should be saved up and brought out when daddy comes home at night. I don't believe in this at all. I think that the parent who catches the child in the act should be the one to administer the discipline.

Question: Are there particular types of discipline that you would handle rather than her, or the other way around?

I think that whoever is there does it. The children are pretty small and either one can administer the type of discipline that they need.

Question: When they get a little bit older, do you think either age or sex of the children will influence who does it?

Well, right now I don't see it -- I'd have to guess. I should hope that by the time they are 15 and 12 that we can talk to them. Sometimes now talking just doesn't get through. I think that later on, if you do it right, if you can sit down and tell them why, that it should help.

Question: Do you think then that either one of you could still handle it, or would?

Well, I think that it would depend on the seriousness then. When they get up to that age, some things can be just a word; other things might take a deprivation of some privilege for a while. Or maybe something harsher, I don't know. I think that maybe sometimes you take a 16-year old boy and put him over your knee -- it might be one of the best things that could happen. I don't know. I know that it straightened me up a lot when my dad did it. All he had to do it was about twice and I was back on the right track again. Well, if it comes down to that type of thing -- yes, I'd be the one to do it. Can you see a mother whipping a 16-year old boy? He would stand and laugh at her.

Question: Do you think that your children are raised more by your philosophy or by your wife's, or is there much difference?

I really don't know. There is a little difference in our philosophy. She is a little bit easier on them. Right now it is kind of hard to tell. We are both interacting with the children so much that they don't know whether they are coming or going. I really don't know.

Question: If you should ever disagree with your wife about how something should be handled with the children, whose way would it be done?

Well, we have disagreed a few times on the way it should be done. Usually we talk it out and then decide. I wouldn't say it goes one way or the other all the time.

Question: What do you think had the most influence on your own ideas on how a child should be raised?

I would say probably how I was raised.

Question: Have you done much reading on how to raise children?

No. I have too many other things to read -- more than I can keep up with.

Question: If you were reading a newspaper or magazine and ran into an article about raising children, would you read it or not?

I've read a few articles. While our children were young we kind of went through Dr. Spock's book -- I don't know how much of an authority he is, but he seems to be. You see articles in the magazines once in a while. Someone's amusing situation on what they did at some time. I've read a few -- I don't pursue it.

Question: What do you usually do when you are home with your children other than actually taking care of their physical needs?

Oh, we sometimes have our little rassel all over the floor and the furniture. I make it a point to play with them a little bit. This might last for 30 minutes, and then I have to cut it off and get back to the studies or something else -- that's on weekdays.

On weekends, when it's good weather we usually go outside. We peddle around the Triads on the bicycle. Maybe this will last for 20 minutes and then I'm through. I really don't get to get out and play with them as much as I would like, but I make it a point to do something with them.

Question: Who is the one to make decisions about things like which doctor you take your children to and when they should see a doctor?

I think my wife is probably quicker to realize the situation than I am. There haven't been many of these situations.

Question: Does she pick out the doctor and go ahead and take them on her own?

Well, we have always -- it's been standard -- we've had one doctor and there has been no problem.

If I'm home, we would both go with them. But usually it is just her that is home during the day when the doctor's office is open.

Question: If you and your wife both have responsibilities away from home at the same time, who would be the one to stay home with a child if he were sick?

That's a pretty broad question. It would depend upon the responsibilities we had. Usually one of them can be subverted. If I had just to go play basketball or do something with the boys, then it would depend upon what she had to do. If I had to go to some sort of a meeting that pertained to business in any way then I would probably put that ahead because she doesn't have what I would classify as really important things to do. They may be real important to her, but not so much that she couldn't stay home with a sick child.

Question: What about choosing a babysitter? Who does this?

Well, she has found most of the new babysitters whenever we have had a new one, but -- oh, I'd say she chooses them. We usually always pick the same girls. The kids know them and they like them and get along real well with them; there's usually no problem and the babysitter knows where everything is -- that is a great help in itself.

Question: Would either one of you call to make the arrangements?

Oh, we both do. Either one of us calls. I've called about as many times as she has, as far as that goes. When we are finding a new one -- getting the initial contact -- it is usually her.

Question: Who takes the lead in teaching the child moral values?

I think that we both do it. It is kind of on the spur -- when you see a child doing something -- for instance if the boy is bothering the little kids out in the Triad we will usually talk to him and explain to him why he shouldn't.

Question: If it is a custom in your family for the children to say prayers, who is the one to teach them?

Well, I'd say my wife started doing it first, but I help them too. I'm not very much on that, but I kind of put away my feelings on it and help the children say their prayers because I think that it is probably good for them.

Question: If they have to learn a little talk for church or school, who would be the one to help them with this?

My wife would.

Question: What about homework?

Well, when the homework gets to an area of my interest I'll probably help. I really don't know -- we'll have to wait and see. I could do more damage than I could help by starting on them too young. You have to have careful judgment here -- if you're doing it for him, or actually giving him the push he needs.

Question: Is there a difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection you show or in the way you express it?

Well, we have different ways. I do show affection for my children. My little girl [age 2] -- we'll kiss each other and love it up, you know. But with the boy [age 5], we've put it back on the plane with two boys. Oh, he'll put his arms around my neck and I'll love him once in a while, but we never kiss.

Question: Did you kiss him when he was younger?

Oh, yes. It's been put out now. We shake hands. He wouldn't give me a kiss if his life depended on it now.

Question: Do you think that you and your wife show about the same amount of affection for them?

Yes, except still if the situation arises which I don't like, I'm quicker to get angry at them. Whether this is a show of affection one way or the other, I don't know. When every thing is smooth and going happy we are probably about equal.

Question: Who do they come to when hurt, if you are both there?

They go to her first -- she is a little more tender.

Question: Are you pretty well satisfied with the way you have divided up the responsibility?

No. It has to be as it is now. It will change shortly.

Question: In what ways?

I'm just going to get my hands out of the dishwasher, and I'm going to cut out the cooking and one thing and another. Not entirely -- I realize that there will be times when my wife may want to go and do something and I'll still do it, but I'm going to get out of it, and this will allow me to have another few minutes with the children after I get home from work at nights. I expect to definitely do less housework and in all probability spend quite a bit more time with the children. Let's say more playtime and less of the daily care type of thing. Of course, the daily care is play in a lot of ways -- you can make it that.

Question: When it comes to the real authority -- who is the "boss"?

Well, we don't have any plan. I don't think that it is necessary to have a plan. I think that you should be consistent. She will probably decide on most of the issues and decide upon the trend after I'm through school and she's with them most of the time. But when it comes to something bigger, I think that it will probably be my decision. This is hard to answer.

Well, it isn't really equal because many of the times she has a better insight to the problem than I do. You can't just say that this is the way we are going to do it and be stubborn about it. I guess some fellows try.

Of course, what I say and what I do are probably two different things, too.

I think you'll get a biased opinion using college students like this. I feel probably most people here are in the same kind of situation I am where I'm interacting more with my children now than I'll be able to after I'm out of school and my wife won't be working.

Case 16

Personal information: Husband and wife both age 29; married for eleven years. Married when both were sophomores in college. He has just finished his doctorate and joined the faculty at USU; moved here two months ago and are living in student housing until they find a home. Wife worked one year until first child born; hasn't worked since. Children: three girls, age 9, 5, and 2½. Active in LDS Church.

Question: What do you think a father's role should be in today's world?

Well, I'm probably a little bit old fashioned. I feel that the wife's place is in the home as a homemaker. In fact, I feel that it would be a slap in the face if I couldn't be the breadwinner. I see a lot of this going on; of course, right now we are over in the Triads and a lot of students are still in this process. I realize for a lot of women -- at least they think so -- that it is a necessity for them to work. I'm not convinced. I think that a lot of them drive very fancy cars to go to school, and I think that it is just a matter of where you place your values. We drove an old, beat-up '57 Chevy and it barely got us through school, but we kept it running with the help of the junk yard, so I know that it is possible. I think that it is just a matter of where you place your values. Personally, I want my children to have someone to greet them when they come home from school and at noon rather than a babysitter at the house. As far as I am concerned, my goal is as stated.

Question: How much responsibility do you think the father has in the raising of the children, compared to that of his wife?

Here again, I think that circumstances often times will be the test. I'll have to admit that during the seven years that I spent at _____ [mid-West university] I was not able to spend time that I would like with the family. Here again we made sacrifices. I'm sure that we had to rely a great deal on my wife for working with the children and so forth, although the way I tried to work it there, when I was home, I never did study or even try. It was a waste of time as far as I was concerned and I figured that as long as I was home I would spend the time with the children and the family.

I'll admit that it wasn't very much time, because I was working full time and doing my dissertation and taking course work. I did finish out a couple of years of course work working full time at night. My nights were for studying and my daytimes were for work, and of course, church work, and so of course I was busy. An average day was probably a 15-hour day. I think now since we have come out here that we have tried to alter that. Saturday is family day and as far as we're concerned we will try to keep it that way. I realize we become involved in more community affairs and more church work here, but we will be able to spend more evenings together as a family.

Question: How much time do you spend with your children now?

I've never spent so much time. I feel like I'm not even working. But, like I say, our Saturdays are pretty much the family days. We go tubing together -- we try to spend Saturday together, and, of course, a lot of times, Sunday. In the evenings I'm home more than I used to be; I would imagine that I'm with them at least 15 hours a week, at least I would think that. Of course, the Saturday is the biggest portion of it, and in the evening I am with them through dinner and so forth. Again this depends on the children. Our nine-year old we are letting stay up until 9:00; the other two are to bed by 7:30 or 8:00. A lot of things dictate this. While we lived in _____ [mid-West state] we made one promise to our nine-year old and that was that she could have a bedroom of her own when we moved to Utah. So since we have to temporarily live in the university housing we did buy one of these hide-a-beds. We use the living room for a bedroom for the wife and I, and the two girls in one room and the oldest girl in a room of her own. So now, as I said, we let her stay up longer and I probably spend a little more time with her than with the others.

Question: What do you usually do when you are with them?

Well, we have family outings with them. As an example the tubing in the winter which we've enjoyed. Every Saturday I take my oldest girl down to the roller rink for an hour in the morning. She skates and sometimes I'll go shopping while she skates and then come back and watch her for a while. Actually since we have been here, a lot of our time has been spent car riding and looking at homes. This is one of our real family activities. We usually take the children along for the ride and they usually stay in the car while we go and look at the house. Once in a while we take them through. We have spent an awfully lot of time doing that. I would say most of the evenings. When I get home they usually have one that we should look at; however, I think that we have found a house now, so that will start to taper off.

Question: When you are home, would you say you spend time directly with your children or are you just home at the same hours they are?

Of course, I am home at the same hours they are pretty much. By living in the Triads the children are in love with that recreation area out there and all their little playmates and friends, so I'd say that a typical evening when I come home they are not in the house. Now that it is getting warmer they are out riding their tricycles and so forth. So a good percentage of it is that we are home at the same time, not that I'm out in the Triad playing with them. Here again, if this were my own backyard maybe I would be with them more.

Question: How do you see your role when it comes to discipline?

Well I think (maybe I'm prejudice) but I think that I have better discipline with them than she does. But I think that this is probably a result of her being with them so much. She feels like she has to discipline so much that maybe they tend not to take her as serious as they should. Usually if I speak with the correct tone of voice, why there

is some action. And yet I don't think that it is a frightening thing with the children; we have a pretty good relationship. But usually they know that I mean it, and here again a lot of this is follow-up. I think that we all say things frequently and then not follow it through; and then, of course, there is no one smarter than a child as far as knowing what they can get away with, and when they can get away with it, or how long they can stall. Here again if I make it a point to follow through, I usually don't have any problem seeing that something is done.

Question: Would you say there are certain areas or types of discipline that you would handle rather than your wife?

I would say that it is whoever is there. We do try to be consistent as far as between us. If I'm sitting there and I hear _____ [wife] say something, I try to make sure that they carry it out. But as far as _____ [wife] saving up a list for me to take care of when I get home -- no, this doesn't happen. It has usually been taken care of. Sometimes, of course, I'm told of the things that happen. Basically we believe in striking while the iron is hot.

Question: Who do you think is more permissive, you or your wife?

My wife. Here again it depends on the way you mean permissive. I would guess that the children get away with more from my wife. I think that it is because she is with them so much that possibly they just don't listen to everything that she says unless they really know that she is serious. This is a problem.

Question: Do you think the children are raised more by your philosophy or hers, or is there much difference?

I think that our philosophy is about the same. We have one main objective -- to raise them to be good children.

Question: If you should disagree on some fairly serious point of how something should be handled, how would it be done?

Basically, we just arrive at an agreement. Occasionally there are times like -- well, when _____ [daughter, age 9] wants to go someplace. I think a lot of times as parents we tend to respond without thinking and come out with a negative response and then you have committed yourself. Then you start thinking about it and all of a sudden you say, "Well, why can't they do it?" -- usually this is a result of a little begging from the children. If we do change our mind we do it by trying to let them know we have a good logical reason why we made the change, so it is not a wishy-washy type thing. There is no point in denying that this type of thing doesn't happen where you commit yourself without thinking. A lot of this is just instantaneous response rather than thinking before you speak.

Question: Would you say that you would agree together then, rather than one of you being the boss in the way things always go?

Oh, yes. It's a democracy. I'm not the old dictatorial-type boss.

Question: What has had the most influence on your ideas on how to raise children?

Let's face it -- when we started we didn't have any ideas, either one of us. I've heard it said that you ought to take the first child and throw it back -- you know, like fishing. I think that we learn in a lot of ways. For example in judging their needs or what they are ready for, just as an example, play things. Why, with our first child (and we are still doing it) we miss a mile on her. We bought her a bicycle when she was five and she couldn't even reach the pedals. She couldn't reach them until she was seven (of course, she was small for her age). We missed it by a couple of years. The thing that we are finding in all these toys as the other children come along is the toys are there and when they reach the point of playing with a certain toy it is there for them to choose. Number one was a guinea pig.

Question: Have you read much on how to raise children?

Oh, what I've had in the typical educational psychology classes -- not much just on my own. My wife does a lot of reading. She reads a lot of Gesell and this type of thing. She reads a lot of the psychology of the "terrible two's" and the "frustrating three's" and the "horrible fives" or however it goes. My wife has done quite a bit of reading on her own and it provides an interest for her. She is trying to avoid being a failure and I don't think that she will be.

Question: How do you divide up the daily care of the children -- feeding them and putting them to bed, etc.?

This hasn't been too much of a problem. One thing as far as babies are concerned we have never had colicky babies or this type of thing. We've always had real good babies. Of course you still have to get up with them. My wife has nursed all of the children right to the cup so we have never had a bottle-fed baby which I appreciate. Usually she would change the diaper when she was done feeding them. I don't mind getting up. Actually -- and this may sound stupid -- when the children get up in the middle of the night, these are some of the choicest times with them. Just to go into their bedroom and reassure them -- I enjoy it, I really do. It doesn't happen too often, but sometimes one of them will get up and can't find the bathroom, or will bump their head on the door. As far as who does it now that the children are older, usually whoever hears them first or whoever is sleeping on the right side of the bed and can get there the easiest. I would say that now that they are older that I probably get up more than my wife does, if you want to put it in numbers. But she had her share of it when they were younger.

Question: What about taking care of them and feeding them otherwise?

I try to give her help. Believe it or not, like I say we have been married eleven years and have had our first bathtub on February 15 [interview took place in April]. We have always had showers and that was a problem. I did have to give more assistance then because we used the kitchen sink when they were smaller and usually I would help on occasion if I were there. Of course, now with the bathtub the kids really think

it is the best deal all around -- they enjoy it. And they're getting old enough to pretty well take care of bathing themselves. The oldest one washes and fixes her own hair now, combs it out and even rolls it herself, and the only thing I have to do is to make sure that she does it.

Question: Would you say, then, that your wife does most of the daily care of the children? Do you feel this is her job and you just help her out with it?

Oh, yes. It's her job -- well, not necessarily. I help her out. I think that it is a two-way proposition. They are my children, too. I help her. Let's face it. A woman, the way I look at it, has very little rest ever. I take off for my national convention for a week. Does she? No. There is very little of that. I really feel like that we are in it together and I try to help her whenever I can. I'd like you to get an interview from her just for the fun of it to see how much of this matches up. I think she'd agree that I help her quite a bit.

Question: Who is the one who decides which doctor you should go to and when the children are sick enough to go?

Well, of course, right now we don't even have a doctor. We haven't needed one. As to which doctor, I guess we just ask different people -- in fact we are doing that right now -- as to who we will go to. A doctor is a doctor as far as I'm concerned. I would say that we are not the type of people who would run their children to the doctor over every little thing. We let them suffer through some of it, you know, the sniffles and such. As far as selecting a doctor I would say in the final analysis it is probably my wife who does the selecting because she is usually -- in the most part -- she has been the one who ends up taking them, because of my absence from the home. But the only way we select a doctor is on the recommendation of the people we ask.

Question: Would you talk it over before she made the final decision on the doctor?

I doubt it. I would go along with whatever doctor she chose, based on recommendations from other people, or maybe I might hear of a good doctor from people I work with. Frankly, I don't even remember thinking about that problem in the past. We've always survived.

Question: What about choosing a babysitter?

Well, right now we are letting our nine-year old babysit for short periods of time. Of course, we pay her -- she has a project going of saving for a bicycle. She is to save 50 per cent of the money and I will provide matching funds. So she is very eager to babysit right now. But if we are out of town or away for any extended period of time, why we get a babysitter. Of course, I have a sister living in the next Triad and she helps out quite a bit right now. We do want to know who is sitting with the children. In _____ [mid-West state] we always used girls in the Ward there that we knew were reliable. We have always had a variety -- have had three or four girls, couldn't always get the same one every time. We had favorites, I suppose.

Question: You say "we" -- is this something that you are concerned with or is this left up to your wife?

I always go get the babysitter -- pick her up -- and take her home, so I guess I am involved with it. Of course, the kids develop certain preferences. They say, "We want Linda, we want Linda," so we try to get Linda.

Question: Who takes the lead in teaching the child moral values such as right and wrong?

I wouldn't say there is a lead. I think that we both try to. Of course, we hold our family home evenings which we think is excellent for this type of thing. We had them every Wednesday when we were in _____ [mid-West state]. Since we have moved we haven't gotten into a definite pattern yet -- for one thing we lost our manual and just found it last week. I think that these family home evenings are excellent. Sometimes when I am alone with one of the children -- and I know that _____ [wife] does, too -- I will take the opportunity to make certain points. It is a continuous thing; it isn't something that you just do at a certain age or at a certain time.

Question: Who is the one who teaches them their prayers?

We both do. Whoever is tucking them in does this.

Question: Who helps them with talks for Sunday School and things like this?

I would say that I end up with most of that. For some reason or another, _____ [wife] says to me "write them a talk." She is entirely capable, but if you wanted a number or figure I would say that in the past I have done most of that.

Question: What about homework?

Our nine-year old does very well on her own, and frankly, this modern math is over my head right now. Really I would say that as far as homework that _____ [wife] probably spends more time between the two of us. I would say that she does the majority. Although _____ [daughter, age 9] is capable of doing most of it by herself, and usually she doesn't need too much help.

Question: Is there a difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection that you show your children or in the way you express it?

As far as physical affection I would say that I show them more than my wife. I've thought a lot about this and analyzed myself. _____ [wife] came from a broken home. Her parents were divorced when she was little -- about five or six. A year or two later her mother remarried. She claims that she can never remember very much affection shown to her by her step father. You know, just playing, this sort of thing. She sees me down on the floor playing with the kids and she often comments

that she is almost envious because she feels that this never happened to her. _____ [Wife] has a brother just younger than her and four or five years later her mother and step father had a little girl. She claims she can remember watching her step father playing with _____ [his daughter] and she was just an onlooker. She claims that she didn't ever learn how to show affection. This has been somewhat of a problem. She is not one to show a lot of outward affection to the children. Personally, I think that this is a result of her upbringing where she wasn't taught to show affection. At least that's the way I've analyzed it. But she admits herself it's hard for her to show affection.

Question: Who do the children come to if they are hurt when you're both home?

They just usually come screaming through the door. Here again, it depends on the children. Our youngest one, _____ [daughter, age 2½], I don't know if you could call her a Mama's girl or not, but she shows more of a bond of affection than the other two to their mother. I think this show of affection between _____ [wife] and the children is more evident with the younger children. As far as your question, let's face it -- I think that whoever is closest. They won't start hollering for one or the other. They just want a "band-aid."

Question: If you had some sons, do you think that there would be a difference between the boys and the girls in how you would treat them? Or does age make a difference?

I'm sure there would be. I really don't know. Like I say, we enjoy the girls. It's hard to say. I guess that I would do rougher type things with the boys. I'm sure that there would be a difference, but I don't know what it would be right now. I often wonder myself.

Question: Are you pretty well satisfied with your arrangement for dividing up the responsibility in your family of taking care of the children and teaching them?

Yes, very happy with it. I don't know of anything I would change.

Question: Has anything changed since you finished school?

No, only I have a little more time. My wife has always been in the home where she belongs. Of course, we all have chores; all the children have their chores except, of course, the youngest. The oldest girl has a certain routine she does when she comes home from school -- empty the garbage and vacuum. Of course, _____ [wife] has this all scheduled out for them. Like on Saturday morning she washes the breakfast dishes and dries them and I think every evening she dries the dishes and so forth. The next girl, she sweeps the kitchen floor and does a pretty good job of it. I would say that _____ [wife] handles these routines more than I do. Like I say, I'm not even certain what they do except I know that they have chores, which I think is good. They need it.

Question: What I'm really trying to get at is who the boss is in the family when it comes to raising the children.

We are.

I would say this: I'm sure that if you walked up to any of my children and asked who was the boss, that they would say that Daddy is the boss. I've heard them say it. But here again, it is a cooperative thing.

Question: The reason I'm asking these questions is because some of the literature implies that the modern father has given up his role as father and has turned it over to his wife. It's difficult to get at this relationship without structuring the questions too much.

Well, anything major is my decision ultimately. As I said, right now we are in the process of buying a house. When it comes right down to the final decision, my wife will say, "It's up to you." Like on insurance, etc. She wants it this way -- this is the only way she'll have it. Yet I involve her a lot. As far as paying my bills and keeping the checkbook -- well, she's my bookkeeper and I want it that way. I don't want to mess with it. She has spare time during the day and she can sit down and do this. She does a very good job with it and there is no problem, yet I know where the money goes. We each have a checkbook -- I carry one and she has the other. The one that's kept at home has the balance. I don't know how much money there is; I just assume when I write a check our account will cover it. Then I correlate mine with hers every so often. As far as who pays the routine bills, she usually does that. Here again, if I'm home and have time I will sit down and write the checks for the bills.

Question: Does this apply to the children too? Would you say she goes ahead and does the raising of them, but under your direction and in consultation with you?

Yes, you bet. Like I say, with the children's allowances -- I always pay them. Every Saturday the oldest one gets 25 cents, the next one 10 cents, and the little one doesn't get anything. But I usually do that myself. Like I say, any little things on money, I'm usually the one who is shelling out. I don't know why. When _____ [daughter, age 9] needs some lunch money or money for something else, it is usually me that they are hitting up.

We're happy with the arrangement -- I'm pleased. I guess it's pretty much of a democracy.

Case 17

Personal information: Husband age 32, wife 32; married nine years. Husband master's candidate in engineering; wife doing graduate study (part-time) in education. Neither is working now; husband on scholarship. Husband worked eight years before returning for graduate work; wife has taught one night a week since first child was born. Children: boys 7, 5, and 3; girl 2. Both active in LDS Church.

Question: What do you think a father's role should be today?

Maybe I'm way out, but I don't have much to do with my kids right now, anyway. I think that my responsibility first is to make sure that they get enough to eat. To get a place to sleep and to be clothed properly, kept warm. I think that is the basic thing. If they don't have that they can't have anything else, I don't think. If you are worried about raising them you better make sure that they are fed and properly clothed and healthy -- or you won't be able to raise them. I don't think that you need to give them too much -- just make sure that they have the basics. That is the first thing.

The second thing -- and maybe I fall down in this area -- is that you should spend a lot of time with them and make sure that they are loved so they will feel secure. You don't want them to grow up in life and feel insecure; they will have a lot of problems if they do. I fall down in this area because I'm never around my children as much as I should be. But I think that that is the next thing -- to be with them and to love them and to show them that they are wanted and that they have security. I guess that the next thing would be to be an example for them. Of course, this is hard to do if you aren't home very much. But then I guess to teach them to be obedient and the principles of the gospel and so on.

I think that it is just like a triangle. I think that the first thing is to make sure that they are taken care of -- that their stomachs are full and they have a place to sleep, that they are well clothed. Then you make them feel secure and then make them be obedient and have respect for you; help them choose their friends so they will be in a good environment and things like that. Then I think maybe the top of this triangle that they should have some financial help like to go to school or something like this -- not too much. Like when I went to school my father helped me with tuition and books and a place to stay, but no car. I think that kids should be given an education, but I think that as far as giving them too much is concerned it will hurt them.

Question: Compared to your wife, how much responsibility do you think that you have in the actual raising and training of your children?

I'd say that it is about 75 per cent her and 25 per cent me. She has a greater influence on them than I do because she is around them

more. However, we are pretty well together on the way we believe we should bring them up -- don't give them too much and things like that. There are some differences, but I think that she has a greater influence.

Question: Do you think that they are raised more by your philosophy or hers?

I guess they are raised more by her philosophy because she has more influence on them.

Question: Is there much difference?

No, except I think that she is giving them too much. That is where we have the biggest difference of opinion. She spends too much money on them and I think that she spoils them. But other than that I think that we have about the same ideas -- we want them to go to college, but as far as a car, that's out. If they want one, they have to get one.

Question: If you and your wife should disagree on something about how they should be raised, which way do you think it would be done?

Boy, that is a hard one to answer! I don't know. I think that I would usually have the last say. Maybe she'd get her way at first, but in the end the decision would go my way. However, we don't disagree very often.

Question: What do you think had the most influence on your ideas on being a father and how to raise children?

I don't know how to answer that. From my folks I guess.

Question: Have you done much reading?

No. My wife has taken a lot of classes and things like that, and she has some good ideas. She has read Skousen's book on how to raise a boy and I think that has influenced us quite a bit. What she has read and her ideas have had a lot of influence on our family but what I've known is only by the way I was raised and I haven't done any reading on it or anything.

Question: When it comes to discipline, how do you see your role compared to that of your wife?

I know I'm too rough on them. My discipline is far too rough I guess. Her discipline is to straighten them out now and not give them a lengthy punishment -- where mine is. I think maybe I'm wrong in this respect. I think that her way is the best. It is just my nature to give them a long-term punishment.

Question: Would you say that she is more permissive than you?

I'd say that she was.

Question: If the children did something during the day, would she discipline them or leave it for you to do?

She usually does it. However, she tells me about it and I sometimes think that she didn't carry it far enough -- maybe I'm wrong.

Question: If you are both there, who would be the one most likely to discipline the children?

I'd say that she would be.

Question: Do you think that the age or sex of the child influences discipline?

I don't know. I had three boys right off the bat and one girl. The girl we haven't had too much experience with as she is just two years old. I would think that the wife would probably be better at handling the girl. I think that she would be more apt to give the right punishment than I would in her case. I think that I would be more apt to handle the punishment better in a situation with the boys.

Question: How do you divide up the daily care -- things like feeding them and getting them ready for bed, getting up in the night with them?

Getting up in the night would be about 50-50. We take turns getting up in the night with them. In the morning I usually help them get dressed. We don't usually have breakfast together because I have a 7:30 class, but I try to help. At night time I always make sure that I'm home for supper and help feed them. I help put them to bed, and then get back to the books. I think that she has most of the responsibility during the day, but during the night it is about half and half. When we are both home together, we both work on it and divide it up. The two younger ones still wear diapers so we each take one and change them.

Question: How much time do you spend with your children?

When I wasn't in school I spent more time. Now I spend about two hours a day, maybe, at the most. When I was working it was more like four hours. On the weekend I spend all Saturday afternoon at least. Every other week we try to take them all to a show or something. Maybe a half a day on the weekend and two hours a day during the week. It isn't very high now. I don't think that I spend much time with them. If I had my way I would spend at least four hours a day with them, but I can't work it in.

Question: What do you usually do when you are with them?

Right now we play baseball. At night we try to have supper and go out and play baseball for a little while. We always go to the show on the weekend -- or every other weekend if we can. When we lived in _____ [town] we usually went to the zoo or something like that while I was working. But up here we usually end up just playing on the playground.

Question: Would you say that the time you are home that you usually spend your time with them, or are you just home at the same hour they are?

The time is usually spent with them. I don't have a chance to read the paper or anything. I usually go right home and get them fed then have time to play with them before it's time to get them ready for bed. So I'm usually involved with them all the time I'm home. You have to be in the Triads with four kids.

Question: When it comes to things like choosing a doctor or deciding if the children need to go to the doctor, who is the one who makes this decision -- you or your wife?

Well, we usually talk it over between us. I know that I'm the high-strung and the nervous one of the two. Things that go wrong usually don't bother my wife too much and usually I'm the one that has something to do with it. If there is any doubt as to whether they should go to the doctor or not, I usually make the decision and take them. If it is really serious then we both agree they should go.

Question: Who goes with them when they have to go?

We take turns. Since I've been in school I think that she has more than I have, although I take them on weekends. It would be about 75 per cent her to 50 per cent me now. When I wasn't in school I would say that it was about 50-50. I had an easy job and could always get off.

Question: What about choosing a babysitter?

That is 100 per cent her job. I just say "get one" and she gets one. I tell her to. I don't feel that it's my place to call up a young girl. A lot of times she doesn't want to, but I just tell her to call and she does.

Question: Do you have anything to say about who she gets?

I tell her sometimes. She likes to get _____ [girl] and other favorites. Sometimes she gets them too young and I tell her about that. With four kids I think that we should have somebody who is really responsible -- they're hard to find.

Question: Who would stay home if you had a sick child?

I imagine that she would. I'm the bread earner so that I come first. However, we've had this happen and she's backed off and taken another class, but we feel that my education is the most important.

Question: Who takes the lead in teaching children things like moral values of what is right and wrong?

She does for the most part. She has better communication with them than I do. I just don't have the communication that she has. I think one reason is because she is around them more. If one of them is hurt, they run to her first before they will me. It might just be

my personality; I'm not around them as much as she is and she has more opportunity to teach them.

Question: Who teaches them to say their prayers?

We have a family night. I think it is more or less 50-50. We teach them to pray during family night.

Question: What about helping them learn talks for Sunday School?

She does it -- I'd say about 90 per cent. She writes them all up and then I help them -- hear them. But she writes them out and she works with the children to learn them -- she does most of this.

Question: Does the age or sex of the children have an influence here?

Right. I think for two reasons. The first is that I'll be out of school and will have more time to put with them as they get older. Second, as they get older, I think that the topics will be more of what I'm interested in helping them with. So I think it will swing over to my end later -- I don't know what percentage.

Question: What about helping with homework?

My wife does it all [laughter]. Well, the oldest goes to the first grade and I help him with arithmetic -- not very much because I'm just not around. As they get older and I get out of school, I'll probably help them more. With the oldest just in first grade this year, I haven't had much chance to worry about it yet.

Question: Do you think there is much difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection that you show your children or the way that you express affection to them?

I think that there is quite a difference there. I think that she has more for them than I do. If they fall down or something and I don't think that it is very bad, I don't sympathize with them where she will run right over and pick them up and start loving them and things like that. She uses a lot more affection than I do. I hold and hug them but she does more. When I'm home I'm involved with all of them -- I don't know if the girl gets more attention or not. But my wife does more than I do.

Question: What about the difference between boys and girls here -- would you tend to show more affection toward one or the other?

No, I don't think so. Just because _____ [daughter, age 2] is a girl, I think that she is more fragil and worry more about her. I really don't know if I can answer that question. She is kind of special in a way -- since she is a girl -- I seem to want to be more protective of her, but of course, she's the youngest, too.

Question: Are you pretty well satisfied with the way you divide up the responsibility of raising the children in your family?

No. I think that my wife has the load. She has more responsibility than she should have. I think that I should take more interest and spend more time than I do even though I am going to school. Even when I'm out of school I don't do as much as I should, I don't think. She has the majority of the responsibility.

Question: Do you think this condition will change when you are out of school?

Well, I think that she has the most of it even when I'm not in school. Conditions will still exist where I can't spend as much time with them as she does.

Question: Is she going to go back to teaching, or will she stay home?

She has taught night school one night a week or something since we've been married. She might do that -- but not for a while. The only reason she is continuing with school is for security so if something happens to me she will have something to fall back on. Her certificate has expired. She wants to teach after the kids are raised.

Question: I'm trying to get at how much real responsibility and obligation you feel toward raising your children, and also where the real authority and decision-making control lies. Obviously your wife is home with them more and does more actual taking care of them. Does she go ahead on her own and do this, or is this under your direction, or is this a responsibility of yours which you delegate to her?

I think that it is mine. I think that it is more mine than hers. I think that it has been delegated to her right now. It's really my responsibility which she takes care of for me.

I don't know if after I'm out of school if it should be the same way -- delegated to her. I think that it is my responsibility. Sometimes, how it is is different than how you'd like it to be. Whether it is or not, I think that the responsibility is on my shoulders.

Question: To what extent?

I'll say 75 per cent of it is my responsibility. Maybe in marriage things are 50-50, I don't know, but I still think that I'm more responsible than she is.

Question: The reason I've asked these questions is because some of the literature implies that the modern father has given up his role as father to his wife. I'm just trying to find out if this is true for a few people.

I'm 100 per cent against that. I think all the responsibility is right here [pointed to himself]. Everything started with the man, I think. He's the one that went after the girl -- then they got married. And I think that it is his responsibility -- the whole works -- including raising the children.

Case 18

Personal information: Husband age 29; married eight years. He had high school education when married. Now a junior forestry major. Neither is employed. Children: two boys, age 5 and 2. Members of LDS Church, but do not consider themselves active.

Question: In terms of today's world, what do you feel the father's role should be?

That's a tough one to answer -- it seems like it is all one with the mother really. As far as running the house, I go along with the old idea that the father is the head of the house and his word would be the last word, which isn't the case all the time. And it comes to be even more important, I think, when you have kids, because the older these kids get, it seems like they -- especially if they are boys (I don't know anything about girls) -- it seems like that since they are boys and their dad is a boy that their dad carries a little more weight than their mother. This is the type of atmosphere that I try to have at our house.

Question: How much responsibility do you think the father has for the care and training of the children?

I think that since the mother is with them more than the father is that she takes the blunt of it all. The training end of it comes about 90 per cent from her, as far as feeding them and things like this. As soon as he [child] leaves the more-or-less hygiene type of learning then the father takes over.

Question: In actual practice who do you feel takes the most responsibility in rearing the children in your home?

My wife does as far as the training end of it is concerned -- manners at the table and this type of thing. As far as my oldest (who started in kindergarten this year) he comes to me more to have me read stories to him and to explain stuff. I think it is because he is interested a lot in animals, and of course, he knows that I am interested in them more than my wife, so therefore he comes to me. I would say when they get past two-years old I think that they kind of lean to their father because they are learning the changes from the basics around them, around the house -- the outside world. I think the kids are coming to me a little more, although I think my wife still has a good part of it.

Question: How do you see your own role in discipline?

It seems like I'm disciplining for all of it. I don't know if this is the right approach, but she uses the threat "wait until your dad gets home" and things like this. So probably the major stuff I handle -- the majority of discipline I take care of. The little ordinary things my wife handles.

Question: Does the age of the children have any influence?

No. It seems like they both get about the same amount of discipline. It makes no difference how old they are as far as that goes.

Question: Is your control over your children more direct or indirect?

I've set it up and they have a good idea of what to expect -- of what pattern to follow. She just more or less reports to me on what happens. I'd have to say it is both direct and indirect.

Question: But you are the one that sets the procedure?

Yes. She more or less just reports their doings -- all the bad things that they have done during the day.

Question: Who is usually more permissive, you or your wife?

I think my wife is. If I understand the question correctly. My wife always says that they can't do all this stuff and when the time comes she softens up a little bit.

Question: Is there much difference between your ideas and your wife's on how children should be raised?

The main differences come from the way she was raised and the way I was raised. I mean, she has certain ideas on discipline. I'd say that this would be the main part of it. I feel like a good switch on the seat end does more than a lot of words can do. It seems to work good in our case anyway. We had quite a bit of trouble at first in her getting used to this. Evidently, in her case, she didn't have this when she was young and I did. This is the only problem I can think of that we've had.

Question: What has had the most influence on your ideas of how to rear children?

I think that I'll have to say that I have a certain feeling toward my mother and dad and I guess this stems from the way they raised me. From this feeling -- this is what guides me on what I should do with my own children. The older my one boy gets, it looks like I went the wrong way. Just as you get to thinking that you've got them to be ideal children then they just blow it all out from under you.

Question: How about her wife? Is her philosophy from her background too?

Yes, I think so. Hers would be about completely on her background.

Question: How much time do you spend with your children?

We have usually two or three hours a week set aside to read to them. We spend quite a bit of time helping my son with his letters and his numbers. I spend usually an average of an hour and a half to two hours a day with them. And then Saturday or Sunday we spend a half a day doing

whatever they want to do. Usually it is up in the mountains. We are teaching the oldest one how to ski, so up until now this is what I've been doing.

Question: Does the age of your boys make much difference in the amount of time you spend with them?

It is beginning to. The problem that I was worried about in having children is that you would show partiality to one from the other. The oldest boy is getting to where now he likes other friends. He would just as soon spend his time out chasing frogs with one of his buddies as he would with me. But the youngest one isn't old enough to play with other children, so I catch myself favoring him or wanting to spend more time with the youngest one, unless I can take the oldest one by myself and go to the mountains where it's just the two of us. Just around home the oldest one is never there. You have to tie him down to keep him in the house. I think at times, since the oldest one knows that I've spent so much time with him, this might be why he is resentful a little bit -- why he takes off. He does show a little jealousy now and again -- it's a problem.

Question: How do you divide up the daily care of the children?

My wife takes care of all the feeding of the children. Of course they are both old enough to feed themselves. But when they weren't, she did all of that stuff.

Question: How about getting up in the night?

I'm a very sound sleeper and I'm thankful for it! There's very few nights, unless they are really sick, and then I help her some. But on the normal run, I never know that they are up.

Question: How about putting them to bed?

That is my department.

Question: Who makes the decisions concerning the child's welfare such as choosing a doctor, a dentist, or a baby sitter?

We just went through this problem. Here again my wife still has quite strong ties with her mother and she still leans toward her parents' decisions on some of these things, especially dealing with kids. Our oldest boy has to have his tonsils out. Of course, her mother wants us to come home and have it done by their doctor. Of course, I disagree just to be onery, I think. So this is a problem. I think that I'd have to say that she has done most of this choosing because she is around other mothers all the time and especially in a new place like this. It is more or less the recommendations of who's good and who's bad and we more or less hear of one who is good and we check it out. We have had pretty good luck so far.

Question: Who usually makes the arrangements about going to the doctor?

It's about 50-50, I'd say.

She usually ends up taking them to the dentist and I take them mostly to the doctor. I think that I'm still scared of dentists myself and that's why I don't want to go any more than I have to.

Question: Who stays home with a sick child?

I feel like it would be mostly her responsibility, and she does. If the need comes up where one of would have to miss something, it would be her.

Question: Who teaches the child moral values such as right and wrong?

This again comes, I think, under the father. I seem to do more of it because it fits in more with discipline. The children learn to respect their mom, but still I think they take more heed to what I say, because they might know that the effects are a little stronger if they don't.

Question: If it is a practice to say prayers in your home, who helps the children?

It just depends. A lot of times we will have a family prayer before they go to bed. If this happens, then of course it is a 50-50 situation. If I take them up to bed then I do, but -- of course, they are old enough now that they say them anyway.

Question: Who helps learn talks for school or church or anything that they might have for that sort of thing?

I think that my wife does most of that. Of course, we haven't been exposed to too much of it up to now, but our oldest boy has given two talks and she's spent the most time.

Question: Does there seem to be any difference in the age of the boys as to who helps them with this type of thing?

The youngest one is too young -- he's just learning how to talk, so I can't answer that one.

Question: Who usually helps with homework or personal problems? Do they come to you or to your wife more?

The oldest boy is a little ashamed, or might be scared (I don't know if that is the right word) or upset, real upset about something that he has done, then he will go to his mother first and then, depending on what she says he might say "don't tell Dad," because he knows a little more will happen with me. This is bad -- I hate to see this because I don't want to scare him. I've tried to convince him that nothing is so bad that you should have to keep to yourself or to hide it or to lie about it to cover up because then, of course, you do two wrongs. I'm winning him over slowly but I'd have to say that he

goes to her most of the time. I like to think that it is because he is a little scared of what happens, which is good and bad.

Question: Is there much difference between you and your wife in the amount of affection you show your children or how you show it?

No, I think this is pretty well equal.

Question: Who do they usually come to when they are hurt?

This is the mother again. It seems like whatever I've tried to do -- it seems that this is the way it was when I was young -- there is none like mom when you have a scratched knee or a cut somewhere -- the ol' mom loves you up and gives you a little more affection than the dad does.

Question: Does the age of the children make much difference?

Yes, the youngest one -- he is still a mama's boy. He sticks pretty close to her as much as possible and things like that, more so than the older boy. The older boy is getting now where it is pretty well equalled out on who he chooses.

Question: Is the arrangement you have for dividing the responsibility of rearing the children satisfactory to you?

I am pretty well satisfied with it. It seems like it is working out pretty well. Of course, raising children is a responsibility in and of itself. We have tried a few different ways -- the newer ways you might say, using kind words and stuff like this and forgetting the discipline -- and it seems like it just works the opposite that it should. So I think that the ways we have now -- I hope it is doing a good job with them.

Question: When you finish school, do you expect any changes in the division of responsibility?

It will have to change a small amount because I doubt that I will be around them as much during the day on weekdays as I am now. Now I have an hour or two break in the morning and a couple in the afternoon. When I get out, of course, I will be gone all of the day and the wife will have to take over a lot of stuff then. I hope that for what time we lose during the week that we can add to it on the weekends.

Question: Do you feel that you make the decisions and your wife carries them out, or do you work out the child rearing together and both do it?

It -- well, when we first got married I guess it would be that I made them and gave them to her and expected her to carry them out. It seems like the longer that you've been married, this working-out situation passes because it seems like that I know or have an idea now how her feelings will go on a certain situation. Therefore, before I ever present it, I consider this, and it seems like when I present it it is half of her thoughts and half of my thoughts combined. So there-

fore, it is 50-50. I like to think that I wear the pants all the way but I couldn't say that I do.

Question: If on some point you disagreed on something that should be done, who would usually win and have their way?

Well, I think here it would depend on the situation. It would depend completely on what you were debating about. On a minor problem, if I can see that it means a lot to her or that she would be upset if it didn't end up her way and it didn't make a whole lot of difference to me, then of course I would go along with it. Some of the things never do get settled. She might go my way and I might go her way, but we never agree. We just do it to get something done instead of just arguing about it.

VITA

DeVona Alice Dean Luke
Candidate for the Degree of
Master of Science

Thesis: The Father Role as Seen by a Group of College Student Fathers

Major Field: Child Development

Biographical Information:

Personal Data: Born at Denver, Colorado, July 26, 1939, daughter of Harold E. and Geraldine L. Dean; married Robert A. Luke July 8, 1964; two children -- David Dean and James Robert.

Education: Attended elementary school in New Mexico, Nevada, Arizona, and California; graduated from Ben Lomond High School, Ogden, Utah, in 1957; received the Bachelor of Science degree from Utah State University in 1961 with a major in child development and minors in secretarial science and accounting; completed requirements for the Master of Science degree in the spring of 1968.

Experience: 1966-67 school year, graduate assistant in the child development laboratories; 1962-66, secretary to Vice President M. R. Merrill, Utah State University; 1961, secretary for the College of Family Life, Utah State University.